



# Bodleian Libraries

UNIVERSITY OF OXFORD

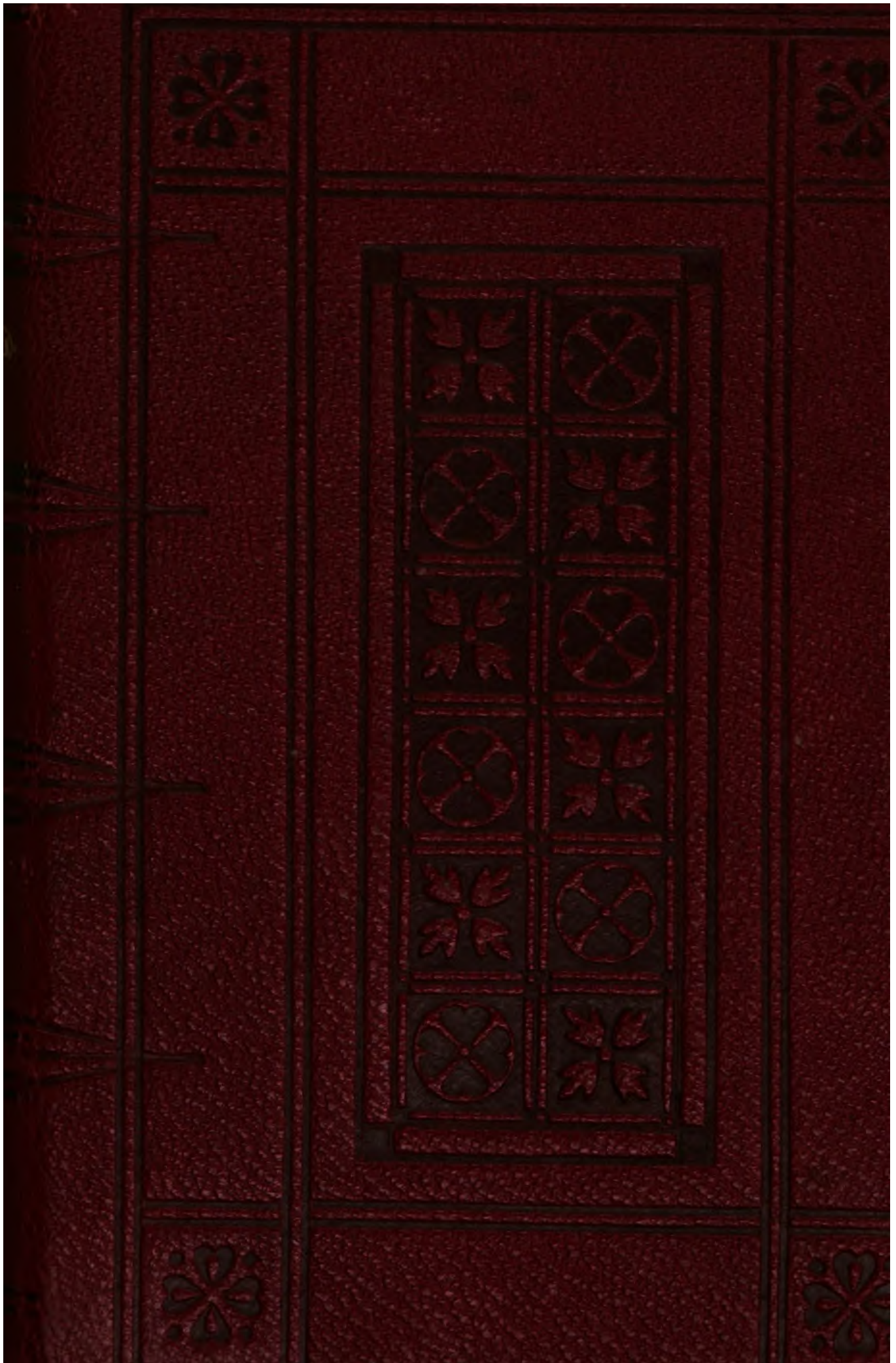
This book is part of the collection held by the Bodleian Libraries and scanned by Google, Inc. for the Google Books Library Project.

For more information see:

<http://www.bodleian.ox.ac.uk/dbooks>



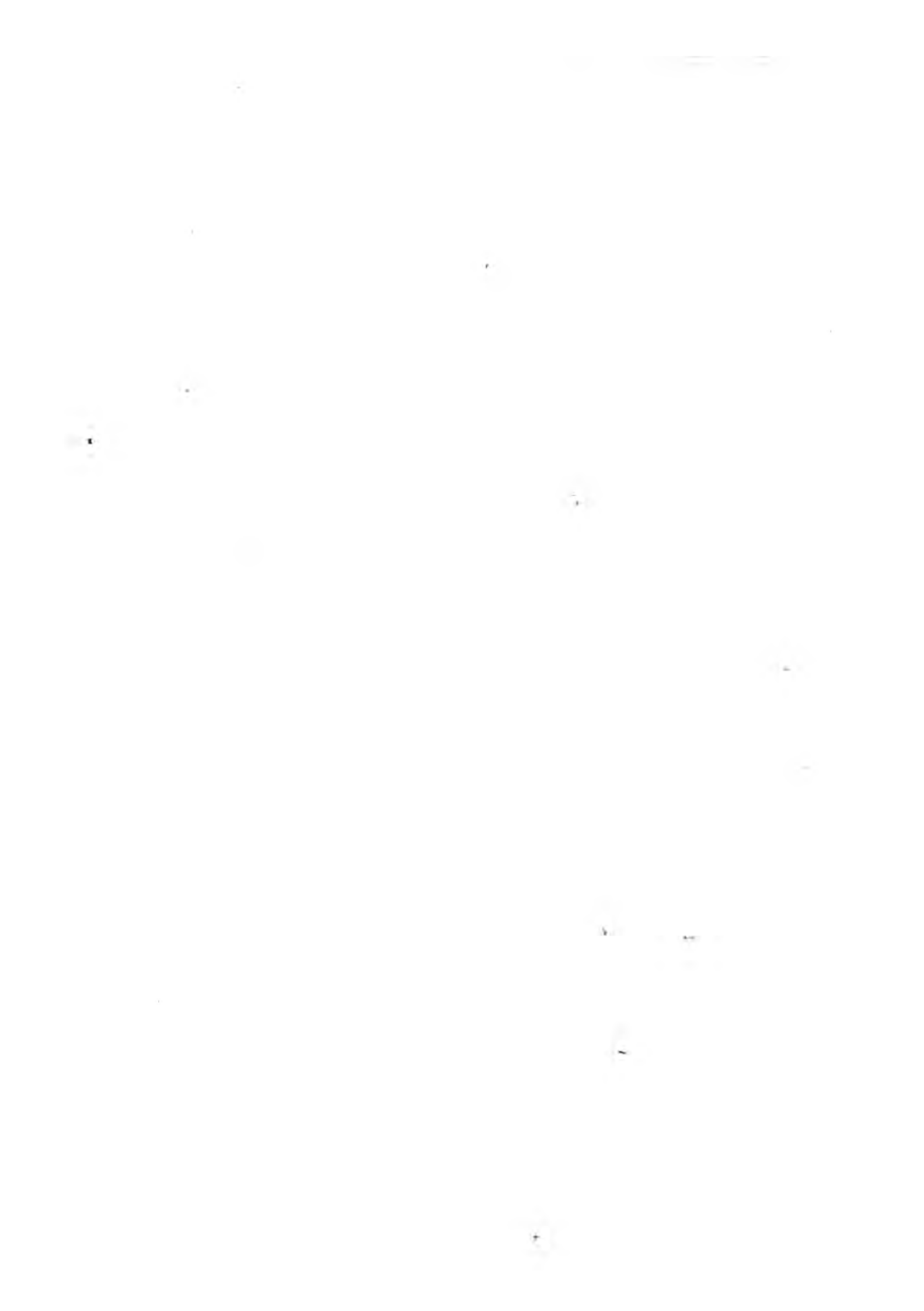
This work is licensed under a Creative Commons Attribution-NonCommercial-ShareAlike 2.0 UK: England & Wales (CC BY-NC-SA 2.0) licence.



10



Johnson g. 213



F. J. W. Bullock

fr. his niece friend

George Cardale

Charleston

Aug. 1858.



THE TEMPLE;  
SACRED POEMS,  
AND  
Private Ejaculations,  
WITH THE  
PRIEST TO THE TEMPLE,  
OR, THE  
Country Parson.

BY GEORGE HERBERT.

---

"Oh, how fayre fruits may you to mortal men  
From Wisdom's garden give! How many may  
By you the wiser and the better prove!"

NICHOLAS GRIMOALD.

---

LONDON:

PRINTED FOR H. WASHBOURNE & CO.,

25, IVY LANE, PATERNOSTER ROW.

MDCCCLIII.





# CONTENTS.

	PAGE
COMMENDATORY VERSES . . . . .	vii
The Printers to the Reader . . . . .	xxi
I. THE TEMPLE . . . . .	1

	PAGE		PAGE
AARON . . . . .	211	Clasping of Hands . . . . .	189
A Dialogue-Anthem . . . . .	205	Coloss. iii. 3, "Our life is hid with Christ in God" . . . . .	95
Affliction, 48, 67, 81, 101, 111		Complaining . . . . .	171
Anagram . . . . .	87	Confession . . . . .	148
An Offering . . . . .	176	Conscience . . . . .	121
Antiphon . . . . . 57, 105		Constancy . . . . .	80
A Parody . . . . .	223	Content . . . . .	75
Artillery . . . . .	165	Death . . . . .	226
Assurance . . . . .	186	Decay . . . . .	113
A true Hymn . . . . .	204	Dedication . . . . .	1
Avarice . . . . .	86	Denial . . . . .	89
A Wreath . . . . .	226	Dialogue . . . . .	133
Bitter-sweet . . . . .	208	Discipline . . . . .	217
Business . . . . .	131	Divinity . . . . .	159
Charms and Knots . . . . .	110	Doomsday . . . . .	227
Christmas . . . . .	90	Dotage . . . . .	202
Church Lock and Key . . . . .	72	Dulness . . . . .	134
Church Monuments . . . . .	71	Easter . . . . .	41
Church Music . . . . .	72	Easter-Wings . . . . .	43, 44
Church Rents & Schisms . . . . .	166		

	PAGE		PAGE
Employment . . . . .	61, 88	Mortification . . . . .	112
Eph. iv. 30, "Grieve not the Holy Spirit," &c.	160	Nature . . . . .	46
Evensong . . . . .	69	Obedience . . . . .	119
Faith . . . . .	52	Paradise . . . . .	157
Frailty . . . . .	79	Peace . . . . .	146
Giddiness . . . . .	149	Perirrhanterium . . . . .	1
Good Friday . . . . .	38	Praise . . . . .	66, 174, 190
Grace . . . . .	65	Prayer . . . . .	54, 118
Gratefulness . . . . .	145	Providence . . . . .	136
Grief . . . . .	198	Redemption . . . . .	39
Heaven . . . . .	229	Repentance . . . . .	51
Holy Baptism . . . . .	45	Self-condemnation . . . . .	207
Holy Communion . . . . .	55	Sepulchre . . . . .	40
Home . . . . .	123	Sighs and Groans . . . . .	93
Hope . . . . .	142	Sin . . . . .	47, 69
Humility . . . . .	77	Sins Round . . . . .	143
JESU . . . . .	130	Sion . . . . .	122
Jordan . . . . .	61, 117	Submission . . . . .	108
Joseph's Coat . . . . .	191	Sunday . . . . .	83
Judgment . . . . .	229	Superliminare . . . . .	21
Justice . . . . .	109, 168	The Agony . . . . .	36
Lent . . . . .	97	The Altar . . . . .	22
Life . . . . .	107	The Answer . . . . .	205
Longing . . . . .	177	The Bag . . . . .	181
Love . . . . .	57, 230	The Banquet . . . . .	220
Love-joy . . . . .	135	The British Church . . . . .	126
Love unknown . . . . .	152	The Bunch of Grapes . . . . .	150
Man . . . . .	103	The Call . . . . .	188
Man's Medley . . . . .	154	The Church . . . . .	21
Mary Magdalen . . . . .	210	The Church-Floor . . . . .	73
Matins . . . . .	68	The Church-Porch . . . . .	1
Misery . . . . .	114	The Collar . . . . .	183
		The Cross . . . . .	199

CONTENTS.

V

	PAGE		PAGE
The Dawning . . . . .	130	The Posy . . . . .	222
The Discharge . . . . .	172	The Sacrifice . . . . .	23
The Elixir . . . . .	224	The Search . . . . .	195
The Family . . . . .	162	The Size . . . . .	163
The Flower . . . . .	200	The Sinner . . . . .	37
The Foil . . . . .	213	The Son . . . . .	203
The Forerunners . . . . .	214	The Star . . . . .	82
The Glance . . . . .	208	The Storm . . . . .	156
The Glimpse . . . . .	185	The Temper . . . . .	59, 60
The Hold-fast . . . . .	170	The Thanksgiving . . . . .	33
The Holy Scriptures . . . . .	63	The Twenty-third Psalm . . . . .	209
The Invitation . . . . .	218	The Water-Course . . . . .	206
The Jews . . . . .	183	The Windows . . . . .	74
The Method . . . . .	157	The World . . . . .	94
The Odour . . . . .	212	Time . . . . .	143
The Pearl . . . . .	100	To all Angels and Saints . . . . .	87
The Pilgrimage . . . . .	169	Trinity-Sunday . . . . .	75
The Priesthood . . . . .	193	Ungratefulness . . . . .	92
The Pulley . . . . .	192	Unkindness . . . . .	106
The Quiddity . . . . .	77	Vanity . . . . .	96, 129
The Quip . . . . .	128	Virtue . . . . .	99
The Reprisal . . . . .	35	Whitsunday . . . . .	64
The Rose . . . . .	215		
II. THE CHURCH MILITANT . . . . .		232	
L'Envoy . . . . .		243	
III. MISCELLANEOUS.			
New Year's Gift to his Mother . . . . .		244	
To his Successor at Bemerton . . . . .		245	
On Lord Danvers . . . . .		246	
A Paradox, &c. . . . .		246	



# COMMENDATORY VERSES.

---

A MEMORIAL TO THE HONOURABLE

GEORGE HERBERT,

AUTHOR OF THE SACRED POEMS, WHO DIED  
ABOUT ANNO 1635 <sup>1</sup>.

READ o'er these raptures with a curious eye,  
You must conclude, this eagle soared high :  
Montgomery Castle was the place where he  
Had his first breathing and nativity.  
Of that most noble house this hero came,  
Who left the world this legacy of fame.  
Great saint, unto thy memory and shrine  
I owe all veneration, save divine,  
For thy rare poems : piety and pen  
Speak thee no less than miracle of men.

<sup>1</sup> In the Register of Fuggleston and Bemerton, the following entry occurs, "Mr. George Herbert, Esq., Parson of Fuggleston and Bemerton, was buried 3 day of March, 1632."

The graces all, both moral and divine,  
In thee concentre, and with thee combine :  
These sacred lessons, set to thy sweet lute,  
Was music that would make Apollo mute :  
Nay, all those warbling chanters of the spring  
Would sit half tame to hear Arion sing.  
What province hath produced a greater soul,  
Between the arctic and antarctic pole,  
Than Wales hath done? where Herbert's Church shall  
A lasting pyramid for him and thee. [be  
What father of a church can you rehearse,  
That gain'd more souls to God 'twixt prose and verse?  
What orator had more magnetic strains?  
What poet such a fancy, pen, or brains,  
In our great hierarchy? show me the man  
That sang more sadly than this dying swan,  
This bird of paradise, this glowworm bright,  
This philomel, this glory of the night.  
Seeing the deluge rage, the clouds still dark,  
Restless below, return'd up to the ark,  
This sacred dove, before he scaled the skies,  
Rarely set forth, the world's great sacrifice ;  
A melting poem, all the rest so high,  
That the dull world may learn to live and die.  
Never did pen humane, or earring brain,  
Express or vent such a seraphic strain.

You that are poets born, contend and strive,  
In spite of death, dead Herbert to revive.  
Bring wreaths of larix, an immortal tree,  
To Salem's sacred hill, for obsequy.  
Parnassus' mount was never so divine,  
To turn the muse's water into wine.  
The Delphian poet went from thence to Rome,  
And there was entertain'd as *major dome* ;  
And though the bishop and his clerks do boast,  
That old false prophet there doth rule the roast.  
A lasting spring of blood springs near that hill,  
There he did bathe ; there you your phials fill.  
'Twill melt your hearts to view those desolations ;  
Yet from that spring flows highest inspirations.  
Therein your annals such encomiums bring  
To his memorial, as the doves in spring.  
Such moan as Egypt's viceroy once did make  
At Abel-Mizraim for his father's sake,  
Make your shrill trumpets : from that thorny hill  
Benhinnon's valleys with amazement fill.  
To the sepulchre go, there sacrifice  
The distillations of your hearts and eyes.  
When you depart, fall down, and kiss that land,  
Where once his master's sacred feet did stand.  
No art or engine can you safely trust  
To polish him, but his own sacred dust.



Nor can you paint or pencil him too high,  
That lived and died without an enemy ;  
That left behind him this admired tomb,  
But no Elisha in Eliah's room.

## An Epitaph

UPON THE HONOURABLE GEORGE HERBERT.

You weeping marbles, monuments, we trust,  
As well with the injurious, as the just.  
When your great trust at last shall be resign'd,  
And when his noble dust shall be refined :  
You shall more gold, myrrh, frankincense return,  
Than shall be found in great Augustus' urn.

He was the wonder of a better age,  
The eclipse of this, of empty heads the rage.  
Phoenix of Wales, of his great name the glory.  
A theme above all verse, beyond all story.  
A plant of Paradise ; which, in a word,  
Worms ne'er shall wither as they did the gourd.

Go, you unborn, bedew dear Herbert's tomb ;  
No more such babes are in Dame Nature's womb.

No more such blazing comets shall appear,  
Nor leave so happy influences here.  
Go, thaw your hearts at his celestial fire,  
And what you cannot comprehend, admire.

Go, you dark poems, dark even as the skies,  
Make the scales fall from our dark dazzling eyes.  
Mirrors were made to mend, not mar our sight,  
Glowworms to glitter in the most gloomy night.  
About those glorious regions he is fled,  
Where once St. Paul was rapt and ravished.

Here a divine, prophet, and poet lies,  
That laid up manna for posterities.

P. D. Esq.

### The Church Militant.

THE Church's progress is a masterpiece,  
Limn'd to the life, of Egypt, Rome, and Greece :  
Wherein he gives the conclave such a blow,  
They ne'er received from either friend or foe.  
England and France do bear an equal share  
In his predictions, which time will declare ;

Here's height of malice, here's prodigious lust,  
Impudent sinning, cruelty, distrust ;  
Here's black ingratitude, here's pride and scorn,  
Here's damned oaths, that cause the land to mourn ;  
And here's oppression, marks of future bane,  
And here's hypocrisy, the counterpane.  
Here's love of guineas, cursed root of all,  
And here's religion turn'd up to the wall :  
And could we see with Herbert's eagle eyes,  
Without checkmate religion westward flies.  
A most sad sacrifice was made of late  
Of God's poor lambs by Pharisaic hate.  
For discipline with doctrine so to jar,  
Was just like bringing justice to the bar.  
Was it the will, or judgment, or commands,  
Of the great pilot for to pass the sands ;  
Well may we hope, that our quick-sighted state  
Will take God's grievance into a debate.  
Cathedral priests long since have laid about  
Hammer and tongs, to drive religion out.  
Her grace and majesty makes them so afraid,  
They cry content, and so espouse her maid.  
She's decent, lovely, chaste, divine they say,  
She loves their sons, that sing our sins away.  
Could we but count the thousands every year  
These dreams consume, the music is too dear.

When Eli's sons made luxury their god,  
Their widows named their posthumes Icabod.  
They both were slain, God's sacred ark was lost,  
Though they had with it a most mighty host.  
Well may ingratitude make us all mourn;  
Pearls we receive, poor pebbles we return.  
Now Seine is swallowing Tiber; if the Thames,  
By letting in them both pollute her streams;  
Or if the seers shall connive or wink,  
Beware the thunderbolt; *Migremus hinc*.  
O let me die, and not survive to see  
Before my death religion's obsequy.  
Religion and dear truth will prove at length  
The alpha and omega of our strength;  
Our Boaz, our Jachin, our Great Britain's glory,  
Look'd on by owls as a romantic story.  
Our cloud, that comes behind us in the day,  
Night's fiery pillar, to direct our way.  
Our chariots, ships, and horsemen, to withstand  
The fury of our foes by sea or land.  
Our eyes may see, as hath been seen before,  
Religion's foes lie floating on the shore:  
The head of England's church proud Babels, but  
Will faith defend, and peace will Janus shut.

Adversus Impia.

Anno 1670.

**Lines intended to be placed****UNDER****HERBERT'S PORTRAIT.**

**BEHOLD** an orator, divinely sage,  
The prophet and apostle of that age.  
View but his Porch and Temple, you shall see  
The body of divine philosophy.  
Examine well the lines of his dead face,  
Therein you may discern wisdom and grace.  
Now if the shell so lovely doth appear,  
How orient was the pearl imprison'd here !

**On Mr. G. Herbert's Book,****ENTITULED,****THE TEMPLE OF SACRED POEMS,****SENT TO A GENTLEWOMAN.**

**KNOW** you faire, on what you looke ;  
Divinest Love lies in this booke :  
Expecting fire from your eyes,  
To kindle this his sacrifice.

When your Hands untie these strings,  
Think you have an Angel by th' wings.  
One that gladly will bee nigh,  
To wait upon each morning sigh.  
To flutter in the balmy aire  
Of your well-perfumed Prayer.  
These white Plumes of his heele lend you,  
Which every day to Heaven will send you :  
To take acquaintance of the *spheare*,  
And all the smooth-fac'd kindred there.

And though *Herbert's* name doe owe  
These Devotions, fairest ; know  
That while I lay them on the shrine  
Of your white Hand, they are mine.

R. Crashaw, Steps to the Temple, 1646.



THE  
Printers to the Reader<sup>1</sup>.

---

THE dedication of this work having been made by the author to the Divine Majesty only, how should we now presume to interest any mortal man in the patronage of it? Much less think we it meet to seek the recommendation of the Muses, for that which himself was confident to have been inspired by a diviner breath than flows from Helicon. The world, therefore, shall receive it in that naked simplicity with which he left it, without any addition either of support or ornament, more than is included in itself. We leave it free and unforestalled to every man's judgment, and to the benefit that he shall find by perusal. Only for the clearing of some passages, we have thought it not unfit to make the common Reader privy to some few particularities of the condition and disposition of the person.

<sup>1</sup> Published with first Edition, Cambridge, 1633.



Being nobly born, and as eminently endued with gifts of the mind, and having by industry and happy education perfected them to that great height of excellency, whereof his Fellowship of Trinity College in Cambridge, and his Oratorship in the University, together with that knowledge which the King's Court had taken of him, could make relation far above ordinary. Quitting both his deserts and all the opportunities that he had for worldly preferment, he betook himself to the Sanctuary and Temple of God, choosing rather to serve at God's Altar, than to seek the honour of State employments. As for those inward enforcements to this course (for outward there was none), which many of these ensuing verses bear witness of, they detract not from the freedom, but add to the honour of this resolution in him. As God had enabled him, so he accounted him meet not only to be called, but to be compelled to this service: Wherein his faithful discharge was such, as may make him justly a companion to the primitive Saints, and a pattern or more for the age he lived in.

To testify his independency upon all others, and to quicken his diligence in this kind, he used in his

ordinary speech, when he made mention of the blessed name of our Lord and Saviour, Jesus Christ, to add, My Master.

Next God, he loved that which God himself hath magnified above all things, that is, his Word: so as he hath been heard to make solemn protestation, that he would not part with one leaf thereof for the whole world, if it were offered him in exchange.

His obedience and conformity to the Church and the discipline thereof was singularly remarkable: Though he abounded in private devotions, yet went he every morning and evening with his family to the Church; and by his example, exhortations, and encouragements drew the greater part of his parishioners to accompany him daily in the public celebration of Divine Service.

As for worldly matters, his love and esteem to them was so little, as no man can more ambitiously seek, than he did earnestly endeavour the resignation of an Ecclesiastical dignity, which he was possessor of. But God permitted not the accomplishment of this desire, having ordained him his instrument for re-edifying of the Church belonging thereunto, that had lain ruined almost twenty years. The repara-

tion whereof, having been uneffectually attempted by public collections, was in the end by his own and some few others' private free-will offerings successfully effected. With the remembrance whereof, as of an especial good work, when a friend went about to comfort him on his death-bed, he made answer, "It is a good work, if it be sprinkled with the blood of Christ:" otherwise than in this respect he could find nothing to glory or comfort himself with, neither in this nor in any other thing.

And these are but a few of many that might be said, which we have chosen to premise as a glance to some parts of the ensuing book, and for an example to the Reader.

We conclude all with his own Motto, with which he used to conclude all things that might seem to tend any way to his own honour,

"Less than the least of God's mercies."

[NICHOLAS FERRAR.]

## The Temple.

### THE DEDICATION.

LORD, MY FIRST FRUITS PRESENT THEMSELVES TO THEE;  
YET NOT MINE NEITHER: FOR FROM THEE THEY CAME,  
AND MUST RETURN. ACCEPT OF THEM AND ME,  
AND MAKE US STRIVE, WHO SHALL SING BEST THY NAME.  
TURN THEIR EYES HITHER, WHO SHALL MAKE A GAIN  
THEIRS, WHO SHALL HURT THEMSELVES OR ME, RE-  
FRAIN.

## The Church Porch.

### Pericchanterium.

THOU, whose sweet youth and early hopes enhance  
Thy rate and price, and mark thee for a treasure,  
Hearken unto a Verser, who may chance  
Rhyme thee to good, and make a bait of pleasure:  
A verse may find him, who a sermon flies,  
And turn delight into a sacrifice.

Beware of lust; it doth pollute and foul  
Whom God in Baptism wash'd with his own blood:  
It blots the lesson written in thy soul;  
The holy lines cannot be understood.  
How dare those eyes upon a Bible look,  
Much less towards God, whose lust is all their book!

Wholly abstain, or wed. Thy bounteous Lord  
Allows thee choice of paths: take no by-ways;  
But gladly welcome what he doth afford;  
Not grudging, that thy lust hath bounds and stays.  
Continence hath his joy: weigh both; and so  
If rottenness have more, let Heaven go.

If God had laid all common, certainly  
Man would have been the encloser: but since now  
God hath impaled us, on the contrary  
Man breaks the fence, and every ground will plough.  
O what were man, might he himself misplace!  
Sure to be cross he would shift feet and face.

Drink not the third glass, which thou canst not tame,  
When once it is within thee; but before  
Mayst rule it, as thou list: and pour the shame,  
Which it would pour on thee, upon the floor.  
It is most just to throw that on the ground,  
Which would throw me there, if I keep the round.

He that is drunken may his mother kill  
Big with his sister: he hath lost the reins,  
Is outlaw'd by himself: all kind of ill  
Did with his liquor slide into his veins.  
The drunkard forfeits Man, and doth divest  
All worldly right, save what he hath by beast.

Shall I, to please another's wine-sprung mind,  
Lose all mine own? God hath given me a measure  
Short of his can, and body; must I find  
A pain in that, wherein he finds a pleasure?  
Stay at the third glass: if thou lose thy hold,  
Then thou art modest, and the wine grows bold.

If reason move not gallants, quit the room;  
(All in a shipwreck shift their several way)  
Let not a common ruin thee intomb:  
Be not a beast in courtesy, but stay,  
Stay at the third cup, or forego the place.  
Wine above all things doth God's stamp deface.

Yet, if thou sin in wine or wantonness,  
Boast not thereof; nor make thy shame thy glory.  
Frailty gets pardon by submissiveness;  
But he that boasts, shuts that out of his story:  
He makes flat war with God, and doth defy  
With his poor clod of earth the spacious sky.

Take not his name, who made thy mouth, in vain:  
It gets thee nothing, and hath no excuse.  
Lust and wine plead a pleasure, avarice gain:  
But the cheap swearer through his open sluice  
Lets his soul run for nought, as little fearing:  
Were I an Epicure, I could bate swearing.

When thou dost tell another's jest, therein  
Omit the oaths, which true wit cannot need :  
Pick out of tales the mirth, but not the sin.  
He pares his apple that will cleanly feed.  
Play not away the virtue of that name,  
Which is thy best stake, when griefs make thee tame.

The cheapest sins most dearly punish'd are ;  
Because to shun them also is so cheap :  
For we have wit to mark them, and to spare.  
O crumble not away thy soul's fair heap.  
If thou wilt die, the gates of hell are broad :  
Pride and full sins have made the way a road.

Lie not ; but let thy heart be true to God,  
Thy mouth to it, thy actions to them both :  
Cowards tell lies, and those that fear the rod ;  
The stormy working soul spits lies and froth.  
Dare to be true. Nothing can need a lie :  
A fault, which needs it most, grows two thereby.

Fly idleness, which yet thou canst not fly  
By dressing, mistressing, and complement.  
If those take up thy day, the sun will cry  
Against thee ; for his light was only lent.  
God gave thy soul brave wings ; put not those feathers  
Into a bed, to sleep out all ill weathers.

Art thou a Magistrate ? then be severe :  
If studious ; copy fair what time hath blurr'd ;  
Redeem truth from his jaws : if Soldier,  
Chase brave employments with a naked sword  
Throughout the world. Fool not ; for all may have,  
If they dare try, a glorious life, or grave.

O England ! full of sin, but most of sloth ;  
Spit out thy phlegm, and fill thy breast with glory :  
Thy gentry bleats, as if thy native cloth  
Transfused a sheepishness into thy story :  
Not that they all are so ; but that the most  
Are gone to grass, and in the pasture lost.

This loss springs chiefly from our education.  
Some till their ground, but let weeds choke their son ;  
Some mark a partridge, never their child's fashion :  
Some ship them over, and the thing is done.  
Study this art, make it thy great design ;  
And if God's image move thee not, let thine.

Some great estates provide, but do not breed  
A mastering mind ; so both are lost thereby :  
Or else they breed them tender, make them need  
All that they leave : this is flat poverty.  
For he, that needs five thousand pound to live,  
Is full as poor as he, that needs but five.



The way to make thy son rich, is to fill  
His mind with rest, before his trunk with riches :  
For wealth without contentment, climbs a hill,  
To feel those tempests, which fly over ditches.  
But if thy son can make ten pound his measure,  
Then all thou addest may be call'd his treasure.

When thou dost purpose ought, (within thy power)  
Be sure to do it, though it be but small :  
Constancy knits the bones, and makes us stour  
When wanton pleasures beckon us to thrall.  
Who breaks his own bond, forfeiteth himself :  
What nature made a ship, he makes a shelf.

Do all things like a man, not sneakingly :  
Think the king sees thee still ; for his King does.  
Simpering is but a lay-hypocrisy :  
Give it a corner, and the clue undoes.  
Who fears to do ill, sets himself to task :  
Who fears to do well, sure should wear a mask.

Look to thy mouth : diseases enter there.  
Thou hast two sconces, if thy stomach call ;  
Carve, or discourse ; do not a famine fear.  
Who carves, is kind to two ; who talks, to all.  
Look on meat, think it dirt, then eat a bit ;  
And say withal, Earth to earth I commit.

Slight those who say amidst their sickly healths,  
Thou livest by rule. What doth not so but man ?  
Houses are built by rule, and commonwealths.  
Entice the trusty sun, if that you can,  
From his ecliptic line ; beckon the sky.  
Who lives by rule then, keeps good company.

Who keeps no guard upon himself, is slack,  
And rots to nothing at the next great thaw.  
Man is a shop of rules, a well-truss'd pack,  
Whose every parcel underwrites a law.  
Lose not thyself, nor give thy humours way :  
God gave them to thee under lock and key.

By all means use sometimes to be alone.  
Salute thyself : see what thy soul doth wear.  
Dare to look in thy chest ; for 'tis thine own ;  
And tumble up and down what thou find'st there.  
Who cannot rest till he good fellows find,  
He breaks up house, turns out of doors his mind.

Be thrifty, but not covetous : therefore give  
Thy need, thine honour, and thy friend his due.  
Never was scraper brave man. Get to live ;  
Then live, and use it : else, it is not true  
That thou hast gotten. Surely use alone  
Makes money not a contemptible stone.

Never exceed thy income. Youth may make  
Even with the year : but age, if it will hit,  
Shoots a bow short, and lessens still his stake,  
As the day lessens, and his life with it.

Thy children, kindred, friends upon thee call ;  
Before thy journey fairly part with all.

Yet in thy thriving still misdoubt some evil ;  
Lest gaining gain on thee, and make thee dim  
To all things else. Wealth is the conjurer's devil ;  
Whom when he thinks he hath, the devil hath him.

Gold thou mayst safely touch ; but if it stick  
Unto thy hands, it woundeth to the quick.

What skills it, if a bag of stones or gold  
About thy neck do drown thee ? raise thy head ;  
Take stars for money ; stars not to be told  
By any art, yet to be purchased.

None is so wasteful as the scraping dame :  
She loseth three for one ; her soul, rest, fame.

By no means run in debt : take thine own measure.  
Who cannot live on twenty pound a year,  
Cannot on forty : he's a man of pleasure,  
A kind of thing that's for itself too dear.

The curious unthrift makes his clothes too wide,  
And spares himself, but would his tailor chide.

Spend not on hopes. They that by pleading clothes  
Do fortunes seek, when worth and service fail,  
Would have their tale believed for their oaths,  
And are like empty vessels under sail.

Old courtiers know this ; therefore set out so,  
As all the day thou mayst hold out to go.

In clothes, cheap handsomeness doth bear the bell.  
Wisdom's a trimmer thing, than shop e'er gave.  
Say not then, This with that lace will do well ;  
But, This with my discretion will be brave.

Much curiousness is a perpetual wooing,  
Nothing with labour, folly long a doing.

Play not for gain, but sport. Who plays for more,  
Than he can lose with pleasure, stakes his heart :  
Perhaps his wife's too, and whom she hath bore :  
Servants and churches also play their part.

Only a herald, who that way doth pass, [glass.  
Finds his crack'd name at length in the church-

If yet thou love game at so dear a rate,  
Learn this, that hath old gamesters dearly cost :  
Dost lose ? rise up : dost win ? rise in that state.  
Who strive to sit out losing hands, are lost.

Game is a civil gunpowder, in peace  
Blowing up houses with their whole increase.

In conversation boldness now bears sway.  
But know, that nothing can so foolish be,  
As empty boldness : therefore first assay  
To stuff thy mind with solid bravery ;  
Then march on gallant : get substantial worth :  
Boldness gilds finely, and will set it forth.

Be sweet to all. Is thy complexion sour ?  
Then keep such company ; make them thy allay :  
Get a sharp wife, a servant that will lour.  
A stumbler stumbles least in rugged way.  
Command thyself in chief. He life's war knows,  
Whom all his passions follow, as he goes.

Catch not at quarrels. He that dares not speak  
Plainly and home, is coward of the two.  
Think not thy fame at every twitch will break :  
By great deeds show, that thou canst little do ;  
And do them not : that shall thy wisdom be ;  
And change thy temperance into bravery.

If that thy fame with every toy be posed,  
'Tis a thin web, which poisonous fancies make ;  
But the great soldier's honour was composed  
Of thicker stuff, which would endure a shake.  
Wisdom picks friends ; civility plays the rest.  
A toy shunn'd cleanly passeth with the best.

Laugh not too much : the witty man laughs least :  
For wit is news only to ignorance.

Less at thine own things laugh ; lest in the jest  
Thy person share, and the conceit advance.

Make not thy sport, abuses : for the fly,  
That feeds on dung, is coloured thereby.

Pick out of mirth, like stones out of thy ground,  
Profaneness, filthiness, abusiveness.

These are the scum, with which coarse wits abound :  
The fine may spare these well, yet not go less.

All things are big with jest : nothing that's plain  
But may be witty, if thou hast the vein.

Wit's an unruly engine, wildly striking  
Sometimes a friend, sometimes the engineer :  
Hast thou the knack ? pamper it not with liking :  
But if thou want it, buy it not too dear.

Many affecting wit beyond their power,  
Have got to be a dear fool for an hour.

A sad wise valour is the brave complexion,  
That leads the van, and swallows up the cities.  
The giggler is a milk-maid, whom infection,  
Or a fired beacon frighteth from his ditties.

Then he's the sport : the mirth then in him rests,  
And the sad man is cock of all his jests.

Towards great persons use respective boldness :  
That temper gives them theirs, and yet doth take  
Nothing from thine : in service, care, or coldness  
Doth ratably thy fortunes mar or make.

Feed no man in his sins : for adulation  
Doth make thee parcel-devil in damnation.

Envy not greatness : for thou makest thereby  
Thyself the worse, and so the distance greater.  
Be not thine own worm : yet such jealousy,  
As hurts not others, but may make thee better,  
Is a good spur. Correct thy passion's spite ;  
Then may the beasts draw thee to happy light.

When baseness is exalted, do not bate  
The place its honour for the person's sake.  
The shrine is that which thou dost venerate ;  
And not the beast, that bears it on his back.  
I care not though the cloth of state should be  
Not of rich arras, but mean tapestry.

Thy friend put in thy bosom : wear his eyes  
Still in thy heart, that he may see what's there.  
If cause require, thou art his sacrifice ;  
Thy drops of blood must pay down all his fear ;  
But love is lost ; the way of friendship's gone ;  
Though David had his Jonathan, Christ his John.

Yet be not surety, if thou be a father.  
Love is a personal debt. I cannot give  
My children's right, nor ought he take it: rather  
Both friends should die, than hinder them to live.  
Fathers first enter bonds to nature's ends;  
And are her sureties, ere they are a friend's.

If thou be single, all thy goods and ground  
Submit to love; but yet not more than all.  
Give one estate, as one life. None is bound  
To work for two, who brought himself to thrall.  
God made me one man; love makes me no more,  
Till labour come, and make my weakness score.

In thy discourse, if thou desire to please:  
All such is courteous, useful, new, or witty:  
Usefulness comes by labour, wit by ease;  
Courtesy grows in court; news in the city.  
Get a good stock of these, then draw the card;  
That suits him best, of whom thy speech is heard.

Entice all neatly to what they know best;  
For so thou dost thyself and him a pleasure:  
(But a proud ignorance will lose his rest,  
Rather than show his cards) steal from his treasure  
What to ask further. Doubts well raised do lock  
The speaker to thee, and preserve thy stock.



If thou be Master-gunner, spend not all  
That thou canst speak, at once ; but husband it,  
And give men turns of speech : do not forestall  
By lavishness thine own, and other's wit,  
As if thou madest thy will. A civil guest  
Will no more talk all, than eat all the feast.

Be calm in arguing : for fierceness makes  
Error a fault, and truth discourtesy.  
Why should I feel another man's mistakes  
More, than his sicknesses or poverty ?  
In love I should : but anger is not love,<sup>!</sup>  
Nor wisdom neither ; therefore gently move.

Calmness is great advantage : he that lets  
Another chafe, may warm him at his fire :  
Mark all his wanderings, and enjoy his frets :  
As cunning fencers suffer heat to tire.  
Truth dwells not in the clouds : the bow that's there  
Doth often aim at, never hit the sphere.

Mark what another says : for many are  
Full of themselves, and answer their own notion.  
Take all into thee ; then with equal care  
Balance each dram of reason, like a potion.  
If truth be with thy friend, be with them both :  
Share in the conquest, and confess a troth.

Be useful where thou livest, that they may  
Both want, and wish thy pleasing presence still.  
Kindness, good parts, great places are the way  
To compass this. Find out men's wants and will,  
And meet them there. All worldly joys go less  
To the one joy of doing kindnesses.

Pitch thy behaviour low, thy projects high ;  
So shalt thou humble and magnanimous be :  
Sink not in spirit : who aimeth at the sky  
Shoots higher much than he that means a tree.  
A grain of glory mixt with humbleness  
Cures both a fever and lethargicness.

Let thy mind still be bent, still plotting where,  
And when, and how the business may be done.  
Slackness breeds worms ; but the sure traveller,  
Though he alight sometimes, still goeth on.  
Active and stirring spirits live alone :  
Write on the others, Here lies such a one.

Slight not the smallest loss, whether it be  
In love or honour ; take account of all :  
Shine like the sun in every corner : see  
Whether thy stock of credit swell, or fall.  
Who say, I care not, those I give for lost ;  
And to instruct them, 'twill not quit the cost.

Scorn no man's love, though of a mean degree ;  
(Love is a present for a mighty king,)  
Much less make any one thine enemy.  
As guns destroy, so may a little sling.

The cunning workman never doth refuse  
The meanest tool, that he may chance to use.

All foreign wisdom doth amount to this,  
To take all that is given ; whether wealth,  
Or love, or language ; nothing comes amiss :  
A good digestion turneth all to health :  
And then as far as fair behaviour may,  
Strike off all scores ; none are so clear as they.

Keep all thy native good, and naturalize  
All foreign of that name ; but scorn their ill :  
Embrace their activeness, not vanities.  
Who follows all things, forfeiteth his will.  
If thou observest strangers in each fit,  
In time they'll run thee out of all thy wit.

Affect in things about thee cleanliness,  
That all may gladly board thee, as a flower.  
Slovens take up their stock of noisomeness  
Beforehand, and anticipate their last hour.  
Let thy mind's sweetness have his operation  
Upon thy body, clothes, and habitation.

In Alms regard thy means, and others' merit.  
Think heaven a better bargain, than to give  
Only thy single market-money for it.  
Join hands with God to make a man to live.  
Give to all something ; to a good poor man,  
Till thou change names, and be where he began.

Man is God's image ; but a poor man is  
Christ's stamp to boot : both images regard.  
God reckons for him, counts the favour his.  
Write, So much given to God ; thou shalt be heard.  
Let thy alms go before, and keep heaven's gate  
Open for thee ; or both may come too late.

Restore to God his due in tithe and time :  
A tithe purloin'd cankers the whole estate.  
Sundays observe : think when the bells do chime,  
'Tis angels' music ; therefore come not late.  
God then deals blessings . if a king did so,  
Who would not haste, nay give, to see the show ?

Twice on the day his due is understood ;  
For all the week thy food so oft he gave thee.  
Thy cheer is mended ; bate not of the food,  
Because 'tis better, and perhaps may save thee.  
Thwart not the Almighty God : O be not cross.  
Fast when thou wilt ; but then 'tis gain, not loss.

Though private prayer be a brave design,  
Yet public hath more promises, more love :  
And love's a weight to hearts, to eyes a sign.  
We all are but cold suitors ; let us move  
Where it is warmest. Leave thy six and seven ;  
Pray with the most : for where most pray, is heaven.

When once thy foot enters the church, be bare.  
God is more there, than thou : for thou art there  
Only by his permission. Then beware,  
And make thyself all reverence and fear.  
Kneeling ne'er spoil'd silk stocking : quit thy state.  
All equal are within the church's gate.

Resort to sermons, but to prayers most :  
Praying's the end of preaching. O be drest ;  
Stay not for the other pin : why thou hast lost  
A joy for it worth worlds. Thus hell doth jest  
Away thy blessings, and extremely flout thee,  
Thy clothes being fast, but thy soul loose about thee.

In time of service seal up both thine eyes,  
And send them to thy heart ; that spying sin,  
They may weep out the stains by them did rise :  
Those doors being shut, all by the ear comes in.  
Who marks in church-time others' symmetry,  
Makes all their beauty his deformity.

Let vain or busy thoughts have there no part :  
Bring not thy plough, thy plots, thy pleasures thither.  
Christ purged his temple ; so must thou thy heart.  
All worldly thoughts are but thieves met together  
To cozen thee. Look to thy actions well ;  
For churches either are our heaven or hell.

Judge not the preacher ; for he is thy Judge :  
If thou mislike him, thou conceivest him not.  
God calleth preaching folly. Do not grudge  
To pick out treasures from an earthen pot.  
The worst speak something good : if all want sense,  
God takes a text, and preacheth patience.

He that gets patience, and the blessing which  
Preachers conclude with, hath not lost his pains.  
He that by being at church escapes the ditch,  
Which he might fall in by companions, gains.  
He that loves God's abode, and to combine  
With saints on earth, shall one day with them shine.

Jest not at preachers' language, or expression :  
How know'st thou, but thy sins made him miscarry ?  
Then turn thy faults and his into confession :  
God sent him, whatso'er he be : O tarry,  
And love him for his Master : his condition,  
Though it be ill, makes him no ill physician.

None shall in hell such bitter pangs endure  
As those, who mock at God's way of salvation.  
Whom oil and balsams kill, what salve can cure?  
They drink with greediness a full damnation.  
The Jews refused thunder; and we, folly.  
Though God do hedge us in, yet who is holy?

Sum up at night what thou hast done by day;  
And in the morning, what thou hast to do.  
Dress and undress thy soul: mark the decay  
And growth of it: if with thy watch, that too  
Be down, then wind up; both since we shall be  
Most surely judged, make thy accounts agree.

In brief, acquit thee bravely; play the man.  
Look not on pleasures as they come, but go.  
Defer not the least virtue: life's poor span  
Make not an ell, by trifling in thy woe.  
If thou do ill, the joy fades, not the pains:  
If well; the pain doth fade, the joy remains.

## The Church.

### Superliminare.

THOU, WHOM THE FORMER PRECEPTS HAVE  
SPRINKLED AND TAUGHT, HOW TO BEHAVE  
THYSELF IN CHURCH; APPROACH, AND TASTE  
THE CHURCH'S MYSTICAL REPAST.

AVOID PROFANENESS; COME NOT HERE:  
NOTHING BUT HOLY, PURE, AND CLEAR,  
OR THAT WHICH GROANETH TO BE SO,  
MAY AT HIS PERIL FURTHER GO.



## The Altar.

A BROKEN ALTAR, LORD, THY SERVANT REARS,  
MADE OF A HEART, AND CEMENTED WITH TEARS :  
WHOSE PARTS ARE AS THY HAND DID FRAME ;  
NO WORKMAN'S TOOL HATH TOUCH'D THE SAME.

A HEART ALONE  
IS SUCH A STONE, .  
AS NOTHING BUT  
THY POWER DOTH CUT.  
WHEREFORE EACH PART  
OF MY HARD HEART  
MEETS IN THIS FRAME,  
TO PRAISE THY NAME :

THAT, IF I CHANCE TO HOLD MY PEACE,  
THESE STONES TO PRAISE THEE MAY NOT CEASE.  
O LET THY BLESSED SACRIFICE BE MINE,  
AND SANCTIFY THIS ALTAR TO BE THINE.

## The Sacrifice.

Oh all ye, who pass by, whose eyes and mind  
To worldly things are sharp, but to me blind ;  
To me, who took eyes that I might you find :  
Was ever grief like mine ?

The Princes of my people make a head  
Against their Maker : they do wish me dead,  
Who cannot wish, except I give them bread :  
Was ever grief like mine ?

Without me each one, who doth now me brave,  
Had to this day been an Egyptian slave.  
They use that power against me, which I gave :  
Was ever grief like mine ?

Mine own Apostle, who the bag did bear,  
Though he had all I had, did not forbear  
To sell me also, and to put me there :  
Was ever grief like mine ?

For thirty pence he did my death devise,  
Who at three hundred did the ointment prize,  
Not half so sweet as my sweet sacrifice :  
Was ever grief like mine ?

Therefore my soul melts, and my heart's dear treasure  
Drops blood (the only beads) my words to measure :  
O let this cup pass, if it be thy pleasure :

Was ever grief like mine ?

These drops being temper'd with a sinner's tears,  
A balsam are for both the Hemispheres,  
Curing all wounds but mine ; all, but my fears.

Was ever grief like mine ?

Yet my disciples sleep : I cannot gain  
One hour of watching ; but their drowsy brain  
Comforts not me, and doth my doctrine stain :

Was ever grief like mine ?

Arise, arise, they come. Look how they run !  
Alas ! what haste they make to be undone !  
How with their lanterns do they seek the sun !

Was ever grief like mine ?

With clubs and staves they seek me, as a thief,  
Who am the way of truth, the true relief,  
Most true to those who are my greatest grief :

Was ever grief like mine ?

Judas, dost thou betray me with a kiss ?  
Canst thou find hell about my lips ? and miss  
Of life, just at the gates of life and bliss ?

Was ever grief like mine ?

See, they lay hold on me, not with the hands  
Of faith, but fury; yet at their commands  
I suffer binding, who have loosed their bands :  
Was ever grief like mine ?

All my disciples fly; fear puts a bar  
Betwixt my friends and me. They leave the star,  
That brought the wise men of the East from far :  
Was ever grief like mine ?

Then from one ruler to another bound  
They lead me: urging, that it was not sound  
What I taught. Comments would the text confound.  
Was ever grief like mine ?

The Priests and Rulers all false witness seek  
'Gainst him, who seeks not life, but is the meek  
And ready Paschal Lamb of this great week :  
Was ever grief like mine ?

Then they accuse me of great blasphemy,  
That I did thrust into the Deity,  
Who never thought that any robbery :  
Was ever grief like mine ?

Some said, that I the temple to the floor  
In three days razed, and raised as before.  
Why, he that built the world can do much more :  
Was ever grief like mine ?

Then they condemn me all with that same breath,  
Which I do give them daily, unto death.

Thus Adam my first breathing rendereth :

Was ever grief like mine ?

They bind, and lead me unto Herod : he  
Sends me to Pilate. This makes them agree ;  
But yet their friendship is my enmity.

Was ever grief like mine ?

Herod and all his bands do set me light,  
Who teach all hands to war, fingers to fight,  
And only am the Lord of hosts and might.

Was ever grief like mine ?

Herod in judgment sits, while I do stand ;  
Examines me with a censorious hand :  
I him obey, who all things else command :

Was ever grief like mine ?

The Jews accuse me with despitefulness ;  
And vying malice with my gentleness,  
Pick quarrels with their only happiness :

Was ever grief like mine ?

I answer nothing, but with patience prove  
If stony hearts will melt with gentle love.  
But who does hawk at eagles with a dove ?

Was ever grief like mine ?

My silence rather doth augment their cry ;  
My dove doth back into my bosom fly,  
Because the raging waters still are high :  
Was ever grief like mine ?

Hark how they cry aloud still, Crucify ;  
It is not fit he live a day, they cry,  
Who cannot live less than eternally :  
Was ever grief like mine ?

Pilate a stranger holdeth off ; but they,  
Mine own dear people, cry, Away, away,  
With noises confused frightening the day :  
Was ever grief like mine ?

Yet still they shout, and cry, and stop their ears,  
Putting my life among their sins and fears,  
And therefore wish my blood on them and theirs :  
Was ever grief like mine ?

See how spite cankers things. These words aright  
Used, and wish'd, are the whole world's light :  
But honey is their gall, brightness their night :  
Was ever grief like mine ?

They choose a murderer, and all agree  
In him to do themselves a courtesy ;  
For it was their own cause who killed me :  
Was ever grief like mine ?

And a seditious murderer he was :  
But I the Prince of Peace ; peace that doth pass  
All understanding, more than heaven doth glass :  
Was ever grief like mine ?

Why, Cæsar is their only King, not I :  
He clave the stony rock, when they were dry ;  
But surely not their hearts, as I well try :  
Was ever grief like mine ?

Ah, how they scourge me ! yet my tenderness  
Doubles each lash : and yet their bitterness  
Winds up my grief to a mysteriousness :  
Was ever grief like mine ?

They buffet me, and box me as they list,  
Who grasp the earth and heaven with my fist,  
And never yet, whom I would punish, miss'd :  
Was ever grief like mine ?

Behold, they spit on me in scornful wise ;  
Who by my spittle gave the blind man eyes,  
Leaving his blindness to mine enemies :  
Was ever grief like mine ?

My face they cover, though it be divine.  
As Moses' face was veiled, so is mine,  
Lest on their double-dark souls either shine :  
Was ever grief like mine ?

Servants and abjects flout me ; they are witty :  
Now prophesy who strikes thee, is their ditty.  
So they in me deny themselves all pity :

Was ever grief like mine ?

And now I am deliver'd unto death,  
Which each one calls for so with utmost breath,  
That he before me well-nigh suffereth :

Was ever grief like mine ?

Weep not, dear friends, since I for both have wept,  
When all my tears were blood, the while you slept  
Your tears for your own fortunes should be kept :

Was ever grief like mine ?

The soldiers lead me to the common hall ;  
There they deride me, they abuse me all :  
Yet for twelve heavenly legions I could call :

Was ever grief like mine ?

Then with a scarlet robe they me array ;  
Which shows my blood to be the only way,  
And cordial left to repair man's decay :

Was ever grief like mine ?

Then on my head a crown of thorns I wear ;  
For these are all the grapes Sion doth bear,  
Though I my vine planted and water'd there :

Was ever grief like mine ?



So sits the earth's great curse in Adam's fall  
Upon my head ; so I remove it all  
From the earth unto my brows, and bear the thrall :  
Was ever grief like mine ?

Then with the reed they gave to me before,  
They strike my head, the rock from whence all store  
Of heavenly blessings issue evermore :  
Was ever grief like mine ?

They bow their knees to me, and cry, Hail, King :  
Whatever scoffs or scornfulness can bring,  
I am the floor, the sink, where they it fling :  
Was ever grief like mine ?

Yet since man's sceptres are as frail as reeds,  
And thorny all their crowns, bloody their weeds ;  
I, who am Truth, turn into truth their deeds :  
Was ever grief like mine ?

The soldiers also spit upon that face  
Which Angels did desire to have the grace,  
And prophets, once to see, but found no place :  
Was ever grief like mine ?

Thus trimmed forth they bring me to the rout,  
Who Crucify him, cry with one strong shout.  
God holds his peace at man, and man cries out :  
Was ever grief like mine ?

They lead me in once more, and putting then  
Mine own clothes on, they lead me out again.  
Whom devils fly, thus is he toss'd of men :

Was ever grief like mine ?

And now weary of sport, glad to engross  
All spite in one, counting my life their loss,  
They carry me to my most bitter cross :

Was ever grief like mine ?

My cross I bear myself, until I faint :  
Then Simon bears it for me by constraint,  
The decreed burden of each mortal saint :

Was ever grief like mine ?

O all ye who pass by, behold and see :  
Man stole the fruit, but I must climb the tree ;  
The tree of life to all, but only me :

Was ever grief like mine ?

Lo, here I hang, charged with a world of sin,  
The greater world o' the two ; for that came in  
By words, but this by sorrow I must win :

Was ever grief like mine ?

Such sorrow, as if sinful man could feel,  
Or feel his part, he would not cease to kneel,  
Till all were melted, though he were all steel.

Was ever grief like mine ?

But, O my God, my God ! why leavest thou me,  
 The Son, in whom Thou dost delight to be ?  
 My God, my God———

Was ever grief like mine ?

Shame tears my soul, my body many a wound ;  
 Sharp nails pierce this, but sharper that confound ;  
 Reproaches, which are free, while I am bound :

Was ever grief like mine ?

Now heal thyself, Physician ; now come down.  
 Alas ! I did so, when I left my crown  
 And Father's smile for you, to feel his frown :

Was ever grief like mine ?

In healing not myself, there doth consist  
 All that salvation, which ye now resist ;  
 Your safety in my sickness doth subsist :

Was ever grief like mine ?

Betwixt two thieves I spend my utmost breath,  
 As he that for some robbery suffereth.  
 Alas ! what have I stolen from you ? death :

Was ever grief like mine ?

A king my title is, prefix'd on high ;  
 Yet by my subjects I'm condemn'd to die  
 A servile death in servile company :

Was ever grief like mine ?

They gave me vinegar mingled with gall,  
 But more with malice : yet, when they did call,  
 With Manna, Angels' food, I fed them all :  
   Was ever grief like mine ?

They part my garments, and by lot dispose  
 My coat, the type of love, which once cured those  
 Who sought for help, never malicious foes :  
   Was ever grief like mine ?

Nay, after death their spite shall further go ;  
 For they will pierce my side, I full well know ;  
 That as sin came, so Sacraments might flow :  
   Was ever grief like mine ?

But now I die ; now all is finished.  
 My woe, man's weal : and now I bow my head :  
 Only let others say, when I am dead,  
   Never was grief like mine.

### The Thanksgiving.

OH King of grief ! (a title strange, yet true,  
   To thee of all kings only due)  
 Oh King of wounds ! how shall I grieve for thee,  
   Who in all grief preventest me ?  
 Shall I weep blood ? why, thou hast wept such store,  
   That all thy body was one door.

Shall I be scourged, flouted, boxed, sold ?

'Tis but to tell the tale is told.

My God, my God, why dost thou part from me ?

Was such a grief as cannot be.

Shall I then sing, skipping, thy doleful story,

And side with thy triumphant glory ?

Shall thy strokes be my stroking ? thorns, my flower ?

Thy rod, my posy ? cross, my bower ?

But how then shall I imitate thee, and

Copy thy fair, though bloody hand ?

Surely I will revenge me on thy love,

And try who shall victorious prove.

If thou dost give me wealth ; I will restore

All back unto thee by the poor.

If thou dost give me honour ; men shall see,

The honour doth belong to thee.

I will not marry ; or, if she be mine,

She and her children shall be thine.

My bosom-friend, if he blaspheme thy name,

I will tear thence his love and fame.

One half of me being gone, the rest I give

Unto some chapel, die or live.

As for thy passion—but of that anon,

When with the other I have done.

For thy predestination, I'll contrive,

That three years hence, if I survive,

I'll build a spital, or mend common ways,  
    But mend my own without delays.  
Then I will use the works of thy creation,  
    As if I used them but for fashion.  
The world and I will quarrel; and the year  
    Shall not perceive, that I am here.  
My music shall find thee, and every string  
    Shall have his attribute to sing;  
That altogether may accord in thee,  
    And prove one God, one harmony.  
If thou shalt give me wit, it shall appear,  
    If thou hast given it me, 'tis here.  
Nay, I will read thy book, and never move  
    Till I have found therein thy love;  
Thy art of love, which I'll turn back on thee,  
    Oh my dear Saviour, Victory!  
Then for thy passion—I will do for that—  
    Alas, my God, I know not what.

### The Reprisal.

I HAVE consider'd it, and find  
There is no dealing with thy mighty passion:  
For though I die for thee, I am behind;  
    My sins deserve the condemnation.

O make me innocent, that I  
May give a disentangled state and free;

And yet thy wounds still my attempts defy,  
For by thy death I die for thee.

Ah ! was it not enough that thou  
By thy eternal glory didst outgo me ?  
Couldst thou not grief's sad conquests me allow,  
But in all victories overthrow me ?

Yet by confession will I come  
Into the conquest. Though I can do nought  
Against thee, in thee I will overcome  
The man, who once against thee fought.

### The Agony.

PHILOSOPHERS have measured mountains,  
Fathom'd the depths of seas, of states, and kings,  
Walk'd with a staff to heaven, and traced fountains :

But there are two vast, spacious things,  
The which to measure it doth more behove :  
Yet few there are that sound them ; Sin and Love.

Who would know Sin, let him repair  
Unto mount Olivet ; there shall he see  
A man, so wrung with pains, that all his hair,  
His skin, his garments bloody be.  
Sin is that press and vice, which forceth pain  
To hunt his cruel food through every vein.

Who knows not Love, let him assay,  
And taste that juice, which on the cross a pike  
Did set abroach ; then let him say  
    If ever he did taste the like.  
Love is that liquor sweet and most divine,  
Which my God feels as blood ; but I, as wine.

### The Sinner.

LORD, how I am all ague, when I seek  
    What I have treasured in my memory !  
    Since, if my soul make even with the week,  
Each seventh note by right is due to thee.  
I find there quarries of piled vanities,  
    But shreds of holiness, that dare not venture  
    To show their face, since cross to thy decrees :  
There the circumference earth is, heaven the centre.  
In so much dregs the quintessence is small :  
    The spirit and good extract of my heart  
    Comes to about the many hundredth part.  
Yet, Lord, restore thy image, hear my call :  
    And though my hard heart scarce to thee can  
    groan,  
    Remember that thou once didst write in stone.



## Good Friday.

O MY chief good,  
How shall I measure out thy blood?  
How shall I count what thee befel,  
And each grief tell?

Shall I thy woes  
Number according to thy foes?  
Or, since one star show'd thy first breath,  
Shall all thy death?

Or shall each leaf,  
Which falls in Autumn, score a grief?  
Or cannot leaves, but fruit, be sign,  
Of the true vine?

Then let each hour  
Of my whole life one grief devour;  
That thy distress through all may run,  
And be my sun.

Or rather let  
My several sins their sorrows get;  
That, as each beast his cure doth know,  
Each sin may so.

SINCE blood is fittest, Lord, to write  
Thy sorrows in, and bloody fight ;  
My heart hath store ; write there, where in  
One box doth lie both ink and sin :

That when sin spies so many foes,  
Thy whips, thy nails, thy wounds, thy woes,  
All come to lodge there, sin may say,  
No room for me, and fly away.

Sin being gone, Oh fill the place,  
And keep possession with thy grace ;  
Lest sin take courage and return,  
And all the writings blot or burn.

### Redemption.

HAVING been tenant long to a rich Lord,  
Not thriving, I resolved to be bold,  
And make a suit unto him, to afford  
A new small-rented lease, and cancel the old.

In Heaven at his manor I him sought :  
They told me there, that he was lately gone  
About some land, which he had dearly bought  
Long since on earth, to take possession.

I straight return'd, and knowing his great birth,  
 Sought him accordingly in great resorts ;  
 In cities, theatres, gardens, parks, and courts :

At length I heard a ragged noise and mirth  
 Of thieves and murderers : there I him espied,  
 Who straight, Your suit is granted, said, and died.

### Sepulchre.

O BLESSED body ! whither art thou thrown ?  
 No lodging for thee, but a cold hard stone ?  
 So many hearts on earth, and yet not one  
   Receive thee ?

Sure there is room within our hearts' good store ;  
 For they can lodge transgressions by the score :  
 Thousands of toys dwell there, yet out of door  
   They leave thee.

But that which shows them large, shows them unfit.  
 Whatever sin did this pure rock commit,  
 Which holds thee now ? Who hath indited it  
   Of murder ?

Where our hard hearts took up of stones to brain thee,  
And missing this, most falsely did arraign thee ;  
Only these stones in quiet entertain thee,  
And order.

And as of old, the law by heavenly art  
Was writ in stone ; so thou, which also art  
The letter of the word, findest no fit heart  
To hold thee.

Yet do we still persist as we began,  
And so should perish, but that nothing can,  
Though it be cold, hard, foul, from loving man  
Withhold thee.

### Easter.

RISE heart ; thy Lord is risen. Sing his praise  
Without delays,  
Who takes thee by the hand, that thou likewise  
With him mayst rise :  
That, as his death calcined thee to dust,  
His life may make thee gold, and much more just.

Awake, my lute, and struggle for thy part  
With all thy art.



## Easter Wings.

LORD, WHO CREATEDST MAN IN WEALTH AND STORE,  
THOUGH FOOLISHLY HE LOST THE SAME,  
DECAYING MORE AND MORE,

TILL HE BECAME

MOST POOR:

WITH THEE

O LET ME RISE

AS LARKS, HARMONIOUSLY,

AND SING THIS DAY THY VICTORIES,

THEN SHALL THE FALL FURTHER THE FLIGHT IN ME.

## Easter Wings.

MY TENDER AGE IN SORROW DID BEGIN :

AND STILL WITH SICKNESSES AND SHAME

THOU DIDST SO PUNISH SIN,

THAT I BECAME

MOST THIN.

WITH THEE

LET ME COMBINE,

AND FEEL THIS DAY THY VICTORY,

FOR, IF I IMP MY WING ON THINE,

AFFLICTION SHALL ADVANCE THE FLIGHT IN ME.

## Holy Baptism.

As he that sees a dark and shady grove,  
Stays not, but looks beyond it on the sky ;  
So when I view my sins, mine eyes remove  
More backward still, and to that water fly,  
Which is above the heavens, whose spring and vent  
Is in my dear Redeemer's pierced side.  
O blessed streams ! either ye do prevent  
And stop our sins from growing thick and wide,  
Or else give tears to drown them, as they grow.  
In you Redemption measures all my time,  
And spreads the plaster equal to the crime :  
You taught the book of life my name, that so,  
Whatever future sins should me miscall,  
Your first acquaintance might discredit all.

## Holy Baptism.

SINCE, Lord, to thee  
A narrow and little gate  
Is all the passage, on my infancy  
Thou didst lay hold, and antedate  
My faith in me.



O let me still  
 Write thee great God, and me a child :  
 Let me be soft and supple to thy will,  
 Small to myself, to others mild,  
 Behither ill.

Although by stealth  
 My flesh get on ; yet let her sister  
 My soul bid nothing, but preserve her wealth :  
 The growth of flesh is but a blister ;  
 Childhood is health.

### Nature.

FULL of rebellion, I would die,  
 Or fight, or travel, or deny  
 That thou hast ought to do with me.

O tame my heart ;  
 It is thy highest art  
 To captivate strong holds to thee.

If thou shalt let this venom lurk,  
 And in suggestions fume and work,  
 My soul will turn to bubbles straight,  
 And thence by kind  
 Vanish into a wind,  
 Making thy workmanship deceit.

O smooth my rugged heart, and there  
 Engrave thy reverend law and fear;  
 Or make a new one, since the old  
   Is sapless grown,  
   And a much fitter stone,  
 To hide my dust, than thee to hold.

¶iii.

LORD, with what care hast thou begirt us round !  
     Parents first season us : then schoolmasters  
     Deliver us to laws ; they send us bound  
 To rules of reason, holy messengers,  
  
 Pulpits and Sundays, sorrow dogging sin,  
     Afflictions sorted, anguish of all sizes,  
     Fine nets and stratagems to catch us in,  
 Bibles laid open, millions of surprises,  
  
 Blessings beforehand, ties of gratefulness,  
     The sound of glory ringing in our ears ;  
     Without, our shame ; within, our consciences ;  
 Angels and grace, eternal hopes and fears.  
  
 Yet all these fences and their whole array  
 One cunning bosom-sin blows quite away.

### Affliction.

WHEN first thou didst entice to thee my heart,  
I thought the service brave :  
So many joys I writ down for my part,  
Besides what I might have  
Out of my stock of natural delights,  
Augmented with thy gracious benefits.

I looked on thy furniture so fine,  
And made it fine to me ;  
Thy glorious household-stuff did me entwine,  
And 'tice me unto thee.  
Such stars I counted mine : both heaven and earth  
Paid me my wages in a world of mirth.

What pleasures could I want, whose King I served,  
Where joys my fellows were ?  
Thus argued into hopes, my thoughts reserved  
No place for grief or fear ;  
Therefore my sudden soul caught at the place,  
And made her youth and fierceness seek thy face :

At first thou gavest me milk and sweetness ;  
I had my wish and way :  
My days were strewed with flowers and happiness ;  
There was no month but May.  
But with my years sorrow did twist and grow,  
And made a party unawares for woe.

My flesh began unto my soul in pain,  
Sickness clave my bones,  
Consuming agues dwell in every vein,  
And tune my breath to groans :  
Sorrow was all my soul ; I scarce believed,  
Till grief did tell me roundly, that I lived.

When I got health, thou took'st away my life,  
And more, for my friends die :  
My mirth and edge was lost ; a blunted knife  
Was of more use than I.  
Thus thin and lean without a fence or friend,  
I was blown through with every storm and wind.

Whereas my birth and spirit rather took  
The way that takes the town ;  
Thou didst betray me to a lingering book,  
And wrap me in a gown.  
I was entangled in the world of strife,  
Before I had the power to change my life.

Yet, for I threaten'd oft the siege to raise,  
                                Not simpering all mine age,  
Thou often didst with Academic praise  
                                Melt and dissolve my rage.  
I took thy sweeten'd pill, till I came near;  
I could not go away, nor persevere.

Yet lest perchance I should too happy be  
                                In my unhappiness,  
Turning my purge to food, thou throwest me  
                                Into more sicknesses.  
Thus doth thy power cross-bias me, not making  
Thine own gift good, yet me from my ways taking.

Now I am here, what thou wilt do with me  
                                None of my books will show:  
I read, and sigh, and wish I were a tree;  
                                For sure then I should grow  
To fruit or shade: at least some bird would trust  
Her household to me, and I should be just.

Yet, though thou troublest me, I must be meek;  
                                In weakness must be stout.  
Well, I will change the service, and go seek  
                                Some other master out.  
Ah, my dear God! though I am clean forgot,  
Let me not love thee, if I love thee not.

## Repentance.

LORD, I confess my sin is great ;  
Great is my sin. Oh ! gently treat  
With thy quick flower, thy momentary bloom ;  
Whose life still pressing  
Is one undressing,  
A steady aiming at a tomb.

Man's age is two hours' work, or three ;  
Each day doth round about us see.  
Thus are we to delights : but we are all  
To sorrows old,  
If life be told  
From what life feeleth, Adam's fall.

O let thy height of mercy then  
Compassionate short-breathed men,  
Cut me not off for my most foul transgression :  
I do confess  
My foolishness ;  
May God accept of my confession.

Sweeten at length this bitter bowl,  
Which thou hast pour'd into my soul ;

Thy wormwood turn to health, winds to fair weather :

For if thou stay,  
I and this day,  
As we did rise, we die together.

When thou for sin rebukest man,  
Forthwith he waxeth woe and wan :  
Bitterness fills our bowels ; all our hearts  
Pine, and decay,  
And drop away,  
And carry with them the other parts.

But thou wilt sin and grief destroy ;  
That so the broken bones may joy,  
And tune together in a well-set song,  
Full of his praises  
Who dead men raises.  
Fractures well cured make us more strong.

### Faith.

LORD, how couldst thou so much appease  
Thy wrath for sin, as when man's sight was dim,  
And could see little, to regard his ease,  
And bring by Faith all things to him ?

Hungry I was, and had no meat :  
I did conceit a most delicious feast ;

I had it straight, and did as truly eat,  
As ever did a welcome guest.

There is a rare outlandish root,  
Which when I could not get, I thought it here :  
That apprehension cured so well my foot,  
That I can walk to heaven well near.

I owed thousands and much more :  
I did believe that I did nothing owe,  
And lived accordingly ; my creditor  
Believes so too, and lets me go.

Faith makes me any thing, or all  
That I believe is in the sacred story :  
And when sin placeth me in Adam's fall,  
Faith sets me higher in his glory.

If I go lower in the book,  
What can be lower than the common manger ?  
Faith puts me there with him, who sweetly took  
Our flesh and frailty, death and danger.

If bliss had lien in art or strength,  
None but the wise and strong had gain'd it :  
Where now by Faith all arms are of a length ;  
One size doth all conditions fit.

A peasant may believe as much  
As a great Clerk, and reach the highest stature.



Thus dost thou make proud knowledge bend and crouch,  
While grace fills up uneven nature.

When creatures had no real light  
Inherent in them, thou didst make the sun,  
Impute a lustre, and allow them bright :  
And in this show what Christ hath done.

That which before was darken'd clean  
With bushy groves, pricking the looker's eye,  
Vanish'd away, when Faith did change the scene :  
And then appear'd a glorious sky.

What though my body run to dust ?  
Faith cleaves unto it, counting every grain,  
With an exact and most particular trust,  
Reserving all for flesh again.

### Prayer.

PRAYER, the Church's banquet, Angel's age,  
God's breath in man returning to his birth,  
The soul in paraphrase, heart in pilgrimage,  
The Christian plummet sounding heaven and earth ;  
Engine against the Almighty, sinner's tower,  
Reversed thunder, Christ-side-piercing spear,  
The six days' world-transposing in an hour,  
A kind of tune, which all things hear and fear ;

Softness, and peace, and joy, and love, and bliss,  
Exalted manna, gladness of the best,  
Heaven in ordinary, man well drest,  
The milky way, the bird of Paradise.

Church-bells beyond the stars heard, the soul's  
blood,  
The land of spices, something understood.

### Holy Communion.

Not in rich furniture, or fine array,  
Nor in a wedge of gold,  
Thou, who from me wast sold,  
To me dost now thyself convey ;  
For so thou shouldst without me still have been,  
Leaving within me sin :

But by the way of nourishment and strength,  
Thou creep'st into my breast ;  
Making thy way my rest,  
And thy small quantities my length ;  
Which spread their forces into every part,  
Meeting sin's force and art.

Yet can these not get over to my soul,  
Leaping the wall that parts  
Our souls and fleshly hearts ;  
But as the out-works, they may control

My rebel-flesh, and, carrying thy name,  
Affright both sin and shame.

Only thy grace, which with these elements comes,  
Knoweth the ready way,  
And hath the privy key,  
Opening the soul's most subtil rooms :  
While those to spirits refined, at door attend  
Dispatches from their friend.

GIVE me my captive soul, or take  
My body also thither.  
Another lift like this will make  
Them both to be together.

Before that sin turn'd flesh to stone,  
And all our lump to leaven ;  
A fervent sigh might well have blown  
Our innocent earth to heaven.

For sure when Adam did not know  
To sin, or sin to smother ;  
He might to heaven from Paradise go,  
As from one room to another.

Thou hast restored us to this ease  
By this thy heavenly blood,  
Which I can go to, when I please,  
And leave the earth to their food.

## Antiphon.

*Cho.* Let all the world in every corner sing,  
MY GOD AND KING.

*Ver.* The heavens are not too high,  
His praise may hither fly :  
The earth is not too low,  
His praises there may grow.

*Cho.* Let all the world in every corner sing,  
MY GOD AND KING.

*Ver.* The church with psalms must shout,  
No door can keep them out :  
But above all, the heart  
Must bear the longest part.

*Cho.* Let all the world in every corner sing,  
MY GOD AND KING.

## Love.

### PART I.

IMMORTAL Love, author of this great frame,  
Sprung from that beauty which can never fade ;  
How hath man parcel'd out thy glorious name,  
And thrown it on that dust which thou hast made,

While mortal love doth all the title gain !

Which siding with invention, they together  
 Bear all the sway, possessing heart and brain,  
 (Thy workmanship) and give thee share in neither.

Wit fancies beauty, beauty raiseth wit :

The world is theirs ; they two play out the game,  
 Thou standing by : and though thy glorious name  
 Wrought out deliverance from the infernal pit,  
 Who sings thy praise ? only a scarf or glove  
 Doth warm our hands, and make them write of love.

PART II.

IMMORTAL heat, O let thy greater flame

Attract the lesser to it : let those fires  
 Which shall consume the world, first make it tame,  
 And kindle in our hearts such true desires,  
 As may consume our lusts, and make thee way.

Then shall our hearts pant thee ; then shall our  
 All her inventions on thine Altar lay, [brain  
 And there in hymns send back thy fire again :

Our eyes shall see thee, which before saw dust ;  
 Dust blown by wit, till that they both were blind :  
 Thou shalt recover all thy goods in kind,  
 Who wert diseased by usurping lust :

All knees shall bow to thee ; all wits shall rise,  
 And praise him who did make and mend our eyes.

## The Temper.

How should I praise thee, Lord ! how should my  
Gladly engrave thy love in steel, [rhymes  
If what my soul doth feel sometimes,  
My soul might ever feel !

Although there were some forty heavens, or more,  
Sometimes I peer above them all ;  
Sometimes I hardly reach a score,  
Sometimes to hell I fall.

O rack me not to such a vast extent ;  
Those distances belong to thee :  
The world's too little for thy tent,  
A grave too big for me.

Wilt thou meet arms with man, that thou dost stretch  
A crumb of dust from heaven to hell ?  
Will great God measure with a wretch ?  
Shall he thy stature spell ?

O let me, when thy roof my soul hath hid,  
O let me roost and nestle there :  
Then of a sinner thou art rid,  
And I of hope and fear.

Yet take thy way ; for sure thy way is best.  
Stretch or contract me thy poor debtor :  
This is but tuning of my breast,  
To make the music better.

Whether I fly with angels, fall with dust,  
Thy hands made both, and I am there.  
Thy power and love, my love and trust,  
Make one place every where.

### The Temper.

It cannot be. Where is that mighty joy,  
Which just now took up all my heart ?  
Lord ! if thou must needs use thy dart,  
Save that, and me ; or sin for both destroy.  
The grosser world stands to thy word and art ;  
But thy diviner world of grace  
Thou suddenly dost raise and raze,  
And every day a new Creator art.  
O fix thy chair of grace, that all my powers  
May also fix their reverence :  
For when thou dost depart from hence,  
They grow unruly, and sit in thy bowers.  
Scatter, or bind them all to bend to thee :  
Though elements change, and heaven move ;  
Let not thy higher court remove,  
But keep a standing majesty in me.

## Jordan.

Who says that fictions only and false hair  
 Become a verse? is there in truth no beauty?  
 Is all good structure in a winding stair?  
 May no lines pass, except they do their duty  
     Not to a true, but painted chair?

Is it not verse, except enchanted groves  
 And sudden arbours shadow coarse-spun lines?  
 Must purling streams refresh a lover's loves?  
 Must all be veil'd, while he that reads, divines,  
     Catching the sense at two removes?

Shepherds are honest people; let them sing:  
 Riddle who list, for me, and pull for prime:  
 I envy no man's nightingale or spring;  
 Nor let them punish me with loss of rhyme,  
     Who plainly say, My God, my King.

## Employment.

If as a flower doth spread and die,  
 Thou wouldst extend me to some good,  
 Before I were by frost's extremity  
     Nipt in the bud;



The sweetness and the praise were thine ;  
But the extension and the room,  
Which in thy garland I should fill, were mine  
At thy great doom.

For as thou dost impart thy grace,  
The greater shall our glory be.  
The measure of our joys is in this place,  
The stuff with thee.

Let me not languish then, and spend  
A life as barren to thy praise  
As is the dust, to which that life doth tend,  
But with delays.

All things are busy ; only I  
Neither bring honey with the bees,  
Nor flowers to make that, nor the husbandry  
To water these.

I am no link of thy great chain,  
But all my company is a weed.  
Lord, place me in thy consort ; give one strain  
To my poor reed.

## The Holy Scriptures.

### PART I.

O BOOK ! infinite sweetness ! let my heart  
Suck every letter, and a honey gain,  
Precious for any grief in any part ;  
To clear the breast, to mollify all pain.

Thou art all health, health thriving, till it make  
A full eternity : thou art a mass  
Of strange delights, where we may wish and take.  
Ladies, look here ; this is the thankful glass,

That mends the looker's eyes : this is the well  
That washes what it shows. Who can endear  
Thy praise too much ? thou art heaven's Lieger here,  
Working against the states of death and hell.

Thou art joy's handsel : heaven lies flat in thee,  
Subject to every mounter's bended knee.

### PART II.

OH that I knew how all thy lights combine,  
And the configurations of their glory !  
Seeing not only how each verse doth shine,  
But all the constellations of the story.

This verse marks that, and both do make a motion  
Unto a third, that ten leaves off doth lie :  
Then as dispersed herbs do watch a potion,  
These three make up some Christian's destiny.

Such are thy secrets, which my life makes good,  
And comments on thee : for in every thing  
Thy words do find me out, and parallels bring,  
And in another make me understood.

Stars are poor books, and oftentimes do miss :  
This book of stars lights to eternal bliss.

### Whit-Sunday.

LISTEN, sweet Dove, unto my song,  
And spread thy golden wings in me ;  
Hatching my tender heart so long,  
Till it get wing, and fly away with thee.

Where is that fire which once descended  
On thy Apostles ? thou didst then  
Keep open house, richly attended,  
Feasting all comers by twelve chosen men.

Such glorious gifts thou didst bestow,  
That the earth did like a heaven appear :  
The stars were coming down to know  
If they might mend their wages, and serve here.

The sun, which once did shine alone,  
Hung down his head, and wish'd for night,  
When he beheld twelve suns for one  
Going about the world, and giving light.

But since those pipes of gold, which brought  
That cordial water to our ground,  
Were cut and martyr'd by the fault  
Of those who did themselves thro' their side wound ;

Thou shutt'st the door, and keep'st within ;  
Scarce a good joy creeps through the chink :  
And if the braves of conquering sin  
Did not excite thee, we should wholly sink.

Lord, though we change, thou art the same ;  
The same sweet God of love and light :  
Restore this day, for thy great name,  
Unto his ancient and miraculous right.

### Grace.

My stock lies dead, and no increase  
Doth my dull husbandry improve :  
O let thy graces without cease  
Drop from above !

If still the sun should hide his face,  
Thy house would but a dungeon prove,  
Thy works night's captives : O let grace  
Drop from above !

The dew doth every morning fall ;  
And shall the dew outstrip thy dove ?  
The dew, for which grass cannot call,  
Drop from above.

Death is still working like a mole,  
And digs my grave at each remove :  
Let grace work too, and on my soul  
Drop from above.

Sin is still hammering my heart  
Unto a hardness, void of love :  
Let suppling grace, to cross his art,  
Drop from above.

O come ! for thou dost know the way.  
Or if to me thou wilt not move,  
Remove me where I need not say—  
Drop from above.

### Praise.

To write a verse or two, is all the praise,  
That I can raise :  
Mend my estate in any ways,  
Thou shalt have more.

I go to Church ; help me to wings, and I  
 Will thither fly ;  
 Or, if I mount unto the sky,  
 I will do more.

Man is all weakness ; there is no such thing  
 As Prince or King :  
 His arm is short ; yet with a sling  
 He may do more.

A herb distill'd, and drunk, may dwell next door,  
 On the same floor,  
 To a brave soul : Exalt the poor,  
 They can do more.

O raise me then ! poor bees, that work all day,  
 Sting my delay,  
 Who have a work, as well as they,  
 And much, much more.

### Affliction.

KILL me not every day,  
 Thou Lord of life ; since thy one death for me  
 Is more than all my deaths can be,  
 Though I in broken pay  
 Die over each hour of Methusalem's stay.

If all men's tears were let  
 Into one common sewer, sea, and brine ;  
 What were they all, compared to thine ?  
 Wherein if they were set,  
 They would discolour thy most bloody sweat.

Thou art my grief alone,  
 Thou Lord conceal it not : and as thou art  
 All my delight, so all my smart :  
 Thy cross took up in one,  
 By way of imprest, all my future moan.

### Matins.

I CANNOT ope mine eyes,  
 But thou art ready there to catch  
 My morning-soul and sacrifice :  
 Then we must needs for that day make a match.

My God, what is a heart ?  
 Silver, or gold, or precious stone,  
 Or star, or rainbow, or a part  
 Of all these things, or all of them in one ?

My God, what is a heart,  
 That thou shouldst it so eye, and woo,  
 Pouring upon it all thy art,  
 As if that thou hadst nothing else to do ?

Indeed, man's whole estate  
 Amounts (and richly) to serve thee :  
 He did not heaven and earth create,  
 Yet studies them, not him by whom they be.

Teach me thy love to know ;  
 That this new light, which now I see,  
 May both the work and workman show :  
 Then by a sunbeam I will climb to thee.

### Sin.

O THAT I could a sin once see !  
 We paint the devil foul, yet he  
 Hath some good in him, all agree.  
 Sin is flat opposite to the Almighty, seeing  
 It wants the good of virtue, and of being.

But God more care of us hath had,  
 If apparitions make us sad,  
 By sight of sin we should grow mad.  
 Yet as in sleep we see foul death, and live ;  
 So devils are our sins in prospective.

### Evening.

BLEST be the God of love,  
 Who gave me eyes, and light, and power this day,  
 Both to be busy, and to play.  
 But much more blest be God above,



Who gave me sight alone,  
Which to himself he did deny :  
For when he sees my ways, I die :  
But I have got his Son, and he hath none.

What have I brought thee home  
For this thy love? have I discharged the debt,  
Which this day's favour did beget?  
I ran; but all I brought, was foam.

Thy diet, care, and cost  
Do end in bubbles, balls of wind;  
Of wind to thee whom I have crost,  
But balls of wild-fire to my troubled mind.

Yet still thou goest on,  
And now with darkness closest weary eyes,  
Saying to man, It doth suffice :  
Henceforth repose; your work is done.

Thus in thy Ebony box  
Thou dost inclose us, till the day  
Put our amendment in our way,  
And give new wheels to our disorder'd clocks.

I muse, which shows more love,  
The day or night; that is the gale, this the harbour;  
That is the walk, and this the arbour;  
Or that the garden, this the grove.

My God, thou art all love.  
Not one poor minute 'scapes thy breast,  
But brings a favour from above ;  
And in this love, more than in bed, I rest.

### Church Monuments.

WHILE that my soul repairs to her devotion,  
Here I entomb my flesh, that it betimes  
May take acquaintance of this heap of dust ;  
To which the blast of death's incessant motion,  
Fed with the exhalation of our crimes,  
Drives all at last. Therefore I gladly trust

My body to the school, that it may learn  
To spell his elements, and find his birth  
Written in dusty heraldry and lines ;  
Which dissolution sure doth best discern,  
Comparing dust with dust, and earth with earth.  
These laugh at Jet, and Marble put for signs,

To sever the good fellowship of dust,  
And spoil the meeting. What shall point out them,  
When they shall bow, and kneel, and fall down flat  
To kiss those heaps, which now they have in trust ?  
Dear flesh, while I do pray, learn here thy stem  
And true descent ; that when thou shalt grow fat,

And wanton in thy cravings, thou mayst know,  
 That flesh is but the glass, which holds the dust  
 That measures all our time ; which also shall  
 Be crumbled into dust. Mark here below,  
 How tame these ashes are, how free from lust,  
 That thou mayst fit thyself against thy fall.

### Church Music.

SWEETEST of sweets, I thank you : when displeasure  
 Did through my body wound my mind,  
 You took me thence ; and in your house of pleasure  
 A dainty lodging me assign'd.  
 Now I in you without a body move,  
 Rising and falling with your wings :  
 We both together sweetly live and love,  
 Yet say sometimes, God help poor kings.  
 Comfort, I'll die ; for if you part from me,  
 Sure I shall do so, and much more :  
 But if I travel in your company,  
 You know the way to heaven's door.

### Church Lock and Key.

I KNOW it is my sin, which locks thine ears,  
 And binds thy hands !  
 Out-crying my requests, drowning my tears ;  
 Or else the chillness of my faint demands.



Hither sometimes sin steals, and stains  
The marble's neat and curious veins :  
But all is cleansed when the marble weeps.  
Sometimes death, puffing at the door,  
Blows all the dust about the floor :  
But while he thinks to spoil the room, he sweeps.  
Blest be the Architect, whose art  
Could build so strong in a weak heart.

### The Windows.

LORD, how can man preach thy eternal word ?  
He is a brittle crazy glass :  
Yet in thy temple thou dost him afford  
This glorious and transcendent place,  
To be a window, through thy grace.

But when thou dost anneal in glass thy story,  
Making thy life to shine within  
The holy preachers, then the light and glory  
More reverend grows, and more doth win ;  
Which else shows waterish, bleak, and thin.

Doctrine and life, colours and light, in one  
When they combine and mingle, bring  
A strong regard and awe : but speech alone  
Doth vanish like a flaring thing,  
And in the ear, not conscience ring.

## Trinity Sunday.

LORD, who hast form'd me out of mud,  
And hast redeem'd me through thy blood,  
And sanctified me to do good ;  
Purge all my sins done heretofore ;  
For I confess my heavy score,  
And I will strive to sin no more.  
Enrich my heart, mouth, hands in me,  
With faith, with hope, with charity ;  
That I may run, rise, rest with thee.

## Content.

PEACE, muttering thoughts, and do not grudge to keep  
Within the walls of your own breast.  
Who cannot on his own bed sweetly sleep,  
Can on another's hardly rest.  
Gad not abroad at every quest and call  
Of an untrained hope or passion.  
To court each place or fortune that doth fall,  
Is wantonness in contemplation.  
Mark how the fire in flints doth quiet lie,  
Content and warm to itself alone :  
But when it would appear to other's eye,  
Without a knock it never shone.

Give me the pliant mind, whose gentle measure  
Complies and suits with all estates ;  
Which can let loose to a crown, and yet with pleasure  
Take up within a cloister's gates.

This soul doth span the world, and hang content  
From either pole unto the centre :  
Where in each room of the well-furnish'd tent  
He lies warm, and without adventure.

The brags of life are but a nine days' wonder :  
And after death the fumes that spring  
From private bodies, make as big a thunder  
As those which rise from a huge King.

Only thy Chronicle is lost : and yet  
Better by worms be all once spent,  
Than to have hellish moths still gnaw and fret  
Thy name in books, which may not rent.

When all thy deeds, whose brunt thou feel'st alone,  
Are chaw'd by others' pens and tongue,  
And as their wit is, their digestion,  
Thy nourish'd fame is weak or strong.

Then cease discoursing, soul, till thine own ground ;  
Do not thyself or friends importune.  
He that by seeking hath himself once found,  
Hath ever found a happy fortune.

### The Quiddity.

MY God, a verse is not a crown ;  
No point of honour, or gay suit,  
No hawk, or banquet, or renown,  
Nor a good sword, nor yet a lute :

It cannot vault, or dance, or play ;  
It never was in France or Spain ;  
Nor can it entertain the day  
With a great stable or domain.

It is no office, art, or news ;  
Nor the Exchange, or busy Hall :  
But it is that, which while I use,  
I am with thee, and most take all.

### Humility.

I SAW the Virtues sitting hand in hand  
In several ranks upon an azure throne,  
Where all the beasts and fowls, by their command,  
Presented tokens of submission.

Humility, who sat the lowest there

To execute their call,

When by the beasts the presents tender'd were,

Gave them about to all.



The angry Lion did present his paw,  
Which by consent was given to Mansuetude.  
The fearful Hare her ears, which by their law  
Humility did reach to Fortitude.

The jealous Turkey brought his coral chain,  
That went to Temperance.

On Justice was bestow'd the Fox's brain,  
Kill'd in the way by chance.

At length the Crow, bringing the Peacock's plume,  
(For he would not) as they beheld the grace  
Of that brave gift, each one began to fume,  
And challenge it, as proper to his place,  
Till they fell out ; which when the beasts espied,  
They leapt upon the throne ;  
And if the Fox had lived to rule their side,  
They had deposed each one.

Humility, who held the plume, at this  
Did weep so fast, that the tears trickling down  
Spoil'd all the train : then saying, Here it is  
For which ye wrangle, made them turn their frown  
Against the beasts : so jointly bandying,  
They drive them soon away ;  
And then amerced them, double gifts to bring  
At the next Session-day.

*Frailty.*

LORD, in my silence how do I despise

What upon trust

Is styled honour, riches, or fair eyes ;

But is—fair dust !

I surname them gilded clay,

Dear earth, fine grass or hay ;

In all, I think my foot doth ever tread

Upon their head.

But when I view abroad both regiments,

The world's, and thine ;

Thine clad with simpleness, and sad events ;

The other fine,

Full of glory and gay weeds,

Brave language, braver deeds :

That which was dust before, doth quickly rise,

And prick mine eyes.

O brook not this, lest if what even now

My foot did tread

Affront those joys, wherewith thou didst endow,

And long since wed

My poor soul, e'en sick of love ;

It may a Babel prove,

Commodious to conquer heaven and thee

Planted in me.

## Constancy.

Who is the honest man?

He that doth still and strongly good pursue,  
To God, his neighbour, and himself most true :

Whom neither force nor fawning can  
Unpin, or wrench from giving all their due.

Whose honesty is not  
So loose or easy, that a ruffling wind  
Can blow away, or glittering look it blind :

Who rides his sure and even trot,  
While the world now rides by, now lags behind.

Who, when great trials come,  
Nor seeks, nor shuns them ; but doth calmly stay,  
Till he the thing and the example weigh :

All being brought into a sum,  
What place or person calls for, he doth pay.

Whom none can work or woo,  
To use in any thing a trick or sleight ;  
For above all things he abhors deceit :

His words and works and fashion too  
All of a piece, and all are clear and straight.

Who never melts or thaws  
At close temptations : when the day is done,  
His goodness sets not, but in dark can run :

The sun to others writeth laws,  
And is their virtue ; Virtue is his Sun.

Who, when he is to treat  
 With sick folks, women, those whom passions sway,  
 Allows for that, and keeps his constant way :

Whom others' faults do not defeat;  
 But though men fail him, yet his part doth play.

Whom nothing can procure,  
 When the wide world runs bias, from his will  
 To writhe his limbs, and share, not mend the ill.

This is the Marksman, safe and sure,  
 Who still is right, and prays to be so still.

### Affliction.

My heart did heave, and there came forth, O God !  
 By that I knew that thou wast in the grief,  
 To guide and govern it to my relief,

Making a sceptre of the rod :

Hadst thou not had thy part,  
 Sure the unruly sigh had broke my heart.

But since thy breath gaye me both life and shape,  
 Thou know'st my tallies ; and when there's assign'd  
 So much breath to a sigh, what's then behind ?

Or if some years with it escape,

The sigh then only is  
 A gale to bring me sooner to my bliss.

Thy life on earth was grief, and thou art still  
Constant unto it, making it to be  
A point of honour, now to grieve in me,  
    And in thy members suffer ill.  
    They who lament one cross,  
Thou dying daily, praise thee to thy loss.

### The Star.

BRIGHT spark, shot from a brighter place,  
Where beams surround my Saviour's face,  
Canst thou be any where  
    So well as there ?

Yet, if thou wilt from thence depart,  
Take a bad lodging in my heart ;  
For thou canst make a debtor,  
    And make it better.

First with thy fire-work burn to dust  
Folly, and worse than folly, lust :  
Then with thy light refine,  
    And make it shine.

So disengaged from sin and sickness,  
Touch it with thy celestial quickness,  
That it may hang and move  
    After thy love.

Then with our trinity of light,  
Motion, and heat, let's take our flight  
Unto the place where thou  
Before didst bow.

Get me a standing there, and place  
Among the beams, which crown the face  
Of him, who died to part  
Sin and my heart :

That so among the rest I may  
Glitter, and curl, and wind as they :  
That winding is their fashion  
Of adoration.

Sure thou wilt joy by gaining me  
To fly home like a laden bee  
Unto that hive of beams  
And garland-streams.

### Sunday.

O DAY most calm, most bright,  
The fruit of this, the next world's bud,  
The indorsement of supreme delight,  
Writ by a friend, and with his blood ;  
The couch of time ; care's balm and bay ;  
The week were dark, but for thy light :  
Thy torch doth show the way.

The other days and thou  
Make up one man ; whose face thou art,  
Knocking at heaven with thy brow :  
The working-days are the back part ;  
The burden of the week lies there,  
Making the whole to stoop and bow,  
Till thy release appear.

Man had straight forward gone  
To endless death ; but thou dost pull  
And turn us round to look on one,  
Whom, if we were not very dull,  
We could not choose but look on still ;  
Since there is no place so alone  
The which he doth not fill.

Sundays the pillars are,  
On which heaven's palace arched lies :  
The other days fill up the spare  
And hollow room with vanities.  
They are the fruitful beds and borders  
In God's rich garden : that is bare  
Which parts their ranks and orders.

The Sundays of man's life,  
Threaded together on time's string,  
Make bracelets to adorn the wife  
Of the eternal glorious King.

On Sunday heaven's gate stands ope ;  
 Blessings are plentiful and rife,  
 More plentiful than hope.

This day my Saviour rose,  
 And did enclose this light for his :  
 That, as each beast his manger knows,  
 Man might not of his fodder miss.  
 Christ hath took in this piece of ground,  
 And made a garden there for those  
 Who want herbs for their wound.

The rest of our Creation  
 Our great Redeemer did remove  
 With the same shake, which at his passion  
 Did the earth and all things with it move.  
 As Samson bore the doors away, [tion,  
 Christ's hands, though nail'd, wrought our salva-  
 And did unhinge that day.

The brightness of that day  
 We sullied by our foul offence :  
 Wherefore that robe we cast away,  
 Having a new at his expense,  
 Whose drops of blood paid the full price,  
 That was required to make us gay,  
 And fit for Paradise.



Thou art a day of mirth :  
 And where the week days trail on ground,  
 Thy flight is higher, as thy birth :  
 O let me take thee at the bound,  
 Leaping with thee from seven to seven,  
 Till that we both, being toss'd from earth,  
 Fly hand in hand to heaven !

### Auarice.

MONEY, thou bane of bliss, and source of woe,  
 Whence comest thou, that thou art so fresh and  
 I know thy parentage is base and low : [fine?  
 Man found thee poor and dirty in a mine.

Sure thou didst so little contribute  
 To this great kingdom, which thou now hast got,  
 That he was fain, when thou wast destitute,  
 To dig thee out of thy dark cave and grot.

Then forcing thee, by fire he made thee bright :  
 Nay, thou hast got the face of man ; for we  
 Have with our stamp and seal transferr'd our right :  
 Thou art the man, and man but dross to thee.

Man calleth thee his wealth, who made thee rich ;  
 And while he digs out thee, falls in the ditch.

Ann- $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{MARY} \\ \text{ARMY} \end{array} \right\}$ gram.

How well her name an ARMY doth present,  
In whom the LORD OF HOSTS did pitch his tent!

To all Angels and Saints.

O GLORIOUS spirits, who after all your bands  
See the smooth face of God, without a frown,  
Or strict commands;

Where every one is king, and hath his crown,  
If not upon his head, yet in his hands:

Not out of envy or maliciousness  
Do I forbear to crave your special aid.

I would address

My vows to thee most gladly, blessed Maid,  
And Mother of my God, in my distress:

Thou art the holy mine, whence came the gold,  
The great restorative for all decay

In young and old;

Thou art the cabinet where the jewel lay:  
Chiefly to thee would I my soul unfold.

But now, alas! I dare not; for our King,  
Whom we do all jointly adore and praise,  
Bids no such thing:

And where his pleasure no injunction lays,  
('Tis your own case) ye never move a wing.

All worship is prerogative, and a flower  
Of his rich crown, from whom lies no appeal  
At the last hour :

Therefore we dare not from his garland steal,  
To make a posy for inferior power.

Although then others court you, if ye know,  
What's done on earth, we shall not fare the worse,  
Who do not so ;

Since we are ever ready to disburse,  
If any one our Master's hand can show.

### Employment.

HE that is weary, let him sit.

My soul would stir  
And trade in courtesies and wit,  
Quitting the fur,

To cold complexions needing it.

Man is no star, but a quick coal

Of mortal fire :

Who blows it not, nor doth control

A faint desire,

Lets his own ashes choke his soul.

When the elements did for place contest

With him, whose will

Ordain'd the highest to be best :

The earth sat still,

And by the others is opprest.

Life is a business, not good cheer ;  
    Ever in wars.  
The sun still shineth there or here,  
    Whereas the stars  
Watch an advantage to appear.  
O that I were an Orange-tree,  
    That busy plant !  
Then should I ever laden be,  
    And never want  
Some fruit for him that dresseth me.  
But we are still too young or old ;  
    The man is gone,  
Before we do our wares unfold :  
    So we freeze on,  
Until the grave increase our cold.

### Denial.

WHEN my devotions could not pierce  
    Thy silent ears ;  
Then was my heart broken, as was my verse ;  
    My breast was full of fears  
    And disorder,  
My bent thoughts, like a brittle bow,  
    Did fly asunder :  
Each took his way ; some would to pleasure go,  
    Some to the wars and thunder  
    Of alarms.

As good go any where they say,  
As to benumb  
Both knees and heart, in crying night and day,  
Come, come, my God, O come,  
But no hearing.

O thou that shouldst give dust a tongue  
To cry to thee,  
And then not hear it crying ! all day long  
My heart was in my knee,  
But no hearing.

Therefore my soul lay out of sight,  
Untuned, unstrung :  
My feeble spirit, unable to look right,  
Like a nipt blossom, hung  
Discontented.

O cheer and tune my heartless breast,  
Defer no time ;  
That so thy favours granting my request,  
They and my mind may chime,  
And mend my rhyme.

### Christmas.

ALL after pleasures as I rid one day,  
My horse and I, both tired, body and mind,  
With full cry of affections, quite astray ;  
I took up in the next inn I could find.

There when I came, whom found I but my dear,  
My dearest Lord, expecting till the grief  
Of pleasures brought me to him, ready there  
To be all passengers' most sweet relief ?

O Thou, whose glorious, yet contracted light,  
Wrapt in night's mantle, stole into a manger ;  
Since my dark soul and brutish is thy right,  
To man of all beasts be not thou a stranger :

Furnish and deck my soul, that thou mayst have  
A better lodging, than a rack, or grave.

THE shepherds sing ; and shall I silent be ?

My God, no hymn for thee ?

My soul's a shepherd too : a flock it feeds

Of thoughts, and words, and deeds.

The pasture is thy word ; the streams, thy grace

Enriching all the place.

Shepherd and flock shall sing, and all my powers

Out-sing the daylight hours.

Then we will chide the sun for letting night

Take up his place and right :

We sing one common Lord ; wherefore he should

Himself the candle hold.

I will go searching, till I find a sun

Shall stay, till we have done ;

A willing shiner, that shall shine as gladly,  
As frost-nipt suns look sadly.  
Then we will sing, and shine all our own day,  
And one another pay :  
His beams shall cheer my breast, and both so twine,  
Till even his beams sing, and my music shine.

### Ingratefulness.

LORD, with what bounty and rare clemency  
Hast thou redeem'd us from the grave !  
If thou hadst let us run,  
Gladly had man adored the sun,  
And thought his god most brave ;  
Where now we shall be better gods than he.  
Thou hast but two rare cabinets full of treasure,  
The Trinity, and Incarnation :  
Thou hast unlock'd them both,  
And made them jewels to betroth  
The work of thy creation  
Unto thyself in everlasting pleasure.  
The statelier Cabinet is the Trinity,  
Whose sparkling light access denies :  
Therefore thou dost not show  
This fully to us, till death blow  
The dust into our eyes ;  
For by that powder thou wilt make us see.

But all thy sweets are pack'd up in the other ;  
 Thy mercies thither flock and flow ;  
     That, as the first affrights,  
 This may allure us with delights ;  
     Because this box we know ;  
 For we have all of us just such another.

But man is close, reserved, and dark to thee ;  
 When thou demandest but a heart,  
     He cavils instantly.  
 In his poor cabinet of bone  
     Sins have their box apart,  
 Defrauding thee, who gavest two for one.

### Sighs and Groans.

O DO not use me  
 After my sins ! look not on my desert,  
 But on thy glory ! then thou wilt reform,  
 And not refuse me : for thou only art  
 The mighty God, but I a silly worm :

O do not bruise me !

O do not urge me !

For what account can thy ill steward make ?  
 I have abused thy stock, destroy'd thy woods,  
 Suck'd all thy magazines : my head did ache,  
 Till it found out how to consume thy goods :

O do not scourge me !



O do not blind me !  
I have deserved that an Egyptian night  
Should thicken all my powers ; because my lust  
Hath still sew'd fig-leaves to exclude thy light :  
But I am frailty, and already dust :

O do not grind me !

O do not fill me  
With the turn'd vial of thy bitter wrath !  
For thou hast other vessels full of blood,  
A part whereof my Saviour emptied hath,  
Even unto death : since he died for my good,

O do not kill me !

But O, reprieve me !  
For thou hast life and death at thy command ;  
Thou art both Judge and Saviour, feast and rod,  
Cordial and corrosive : put not thy hand  
Into the bitter box ; but, O my God,  
My God, relieve me.

### The World.

LOVE built a stately house ; where Fortune came :  
And spinning fancies she was heard to say,  
That her fine cobwebs did support the frame,  
Whereas they were supported by the same :  
But Wisdom quickly swept them all away.

Then Pleasure came, who, liking not the fashion,  
 Began to make balconies, terraces,  
 Till she had weaken'd all by alteration :  
 But reverend laws, and many a proclamation  
 Reformed all at length with menaces.

Then enter'd Sin, and with that Sycamore,  
 Whose leaves first shelter'd man from drought and  
 Working and winding silyly evermore, [dew,  
 The inward walls and summers cleft and tore :  
 But Grace shored these, and cut that as it grew.

Then Sin combined with Death in a firm band,  
 To raze the building to the very floor :  
 Which they effected, none could them withstand ;  
 But Love and Grace took Glory by the hand,  
 And built a braver palace than before.

### Colossians III. 3.

*Our life is hid with Christ in God.*

My words and thoughts do both express this notion,  
 That LIFE hath with the sun a double motion.  
 The first IS straight, and our diurnal friend ;  
 The other HID, and doth obliquely bend.  
 One life is wrapt IN flesh, and tends to earth :  
 The other winds towards HIM, whose happy birth

Taught me to live here so, **THAT** still one eye  
 Should aim and shoot at that which **IS** on high ;  
 Quitting with daily labour all **MY** pleasure,  
 To gain at harvest an eternal **TREASURE**.

### Vanity.

**THE** fleet astronomer can bore  
 And thred the spheres with his quick piercing mind :  
 He views their stations, walks from door to door,  
     Surveys, as if he had design'd  
 To make a purchase there : he sees their dances,  
     And knoweth long before,  
 Both their full-ey'd aspects, and secret glances.

**The** nimble diver with his side  
 Cuts through the working waves, that he may fetch  
 His dearly-earned pearl, which God did hide  
     On purpose from the venturous wretch ;  
 That he might save his life, and also hers,  
     Who with excessive pride  
 Her own destruction and his danger wears.

**The** subtle chymic can divest  
 And strip the creature naked, till he find  
     The callow principles within their nest :  
     There he imparts to them his mind,  
 Admitted to their bed-chamber, before  
     They appear trim and drest  
 To ordinary suitors at the door.

What hath not man sought out and found,  
 But his dear God? who yet his glorious law  
 Embosoms in us, mellowing the ground

With showers and frosts, with love and awe;  
 So that we need not say, Where's this command?

Poor man! thou searchest round  
 To find out death, but missest life at hand.

### Lent.

WELCOME, dear feast of Lent: who loves not Thee,  
 He loves not Temperance, or Authority,  
 But is composed of passion.

The Scriptures bid us fast; the Church says, now:  
 Give to thy Mother what thou wouldst allow  
 To every corporation.

The humble soul, composed of love and fear,  
 Begins at home, and lays the burden there,  
 When doctrines disagree:  
 He says, in things which use hath justly got,  
 I am a scandal to the Church, and not  
 The Church is so to me.

True Christians should be glad of an occasion  
 To use their temperance, seeking no evasion,  
 When good is seasonable;

Unless authority, which should increase  
The obligation in us, make it less,  
And power itself disable.

Besides the cleanness of sweet abstinence,  
Quick thoughts and motions at a small expense,  
A face not fearing light :

Whereas in fulness there are sluttish fumes,  
Sour exhalations, and dishonest rheums,  
Revenging the delight.

Then those same pendent profits, which the spring  
And Easter intimate, enlarge the thing,  
And goodness of the deed.

Neither ought other men's abuse of Lent  
Spoil the good use ; lest by that argument  
We forfeit all our Creed.

'Tis true, we cannot reach Christ's fortieth day ;  
Yet to go part of that religious way  
Is better than to rest :

We cannot reach our Saviour's purity ;  
Yet are we bid, " Be holy e'en as he."  
In both let's do our best.

Who goeth in the way which Christ hath gone,  
Is much more sure to meet with him, than one  
That travelleth bye-ways.

Perhaps my God, though he be far before,  
May turn, and take me by the hand, and more,  
May strengthen my decays.

Yet, Lord, instruct us to improve our fast  
 By starving sin, and taking such repast  
     As may our faults control :  
 That every man may revel at his door,  
 Not in his parlour ; banqueting the poor,  
     And among those his soul.

### Virtue.

SWEET day, so cool, so calm, so bright,  
 The bridal of the earth and sky,  
 The dew shall weep thy fall to-night ;  
     For thou must die.

Sweet rose, whose hue angry and brave  
 Bids the rash gazer wipe his eye,  
 Thy root is ever in its grave,  
     And thou must die.

Sweet spring, full of sweet days and roses,  
 A box where sweets compacted lie,  
 My music shows ye have your closes,  
     And all must die.

Only a sweet and virtuous soul,  
 Like season'd timber, never gives ;  
 But though the whole world turn to coal,  
     Then chiefly lives.

## The Pearl.

MATT. XIII.

I KNOW the ways of learning ; both the head  
And pipes that feed the press, and make it run ;  
What reason hath from nature borrowed,  
Or of itself, like a good housewife, spun  
In laws and policy ; what the stars conspire,  
What willing nature speaks, what forced by fire ;  
Both the old discoveries, and the new-found seas,  
The stock and surplus, cause and history :  
All these stand open, or I have the keys :  
Yet I love thee.

I know the ways of honour, what maintains  
The quick returns of courtesy and wit :  
In vies of favours whether party gains,  
When glory swells the heart, and mouldeth it  
To all expressions both of hand and eye,  
Which on the world a true love-knot may tie,  
And bear the bundle, wheresoe'er it goes :  
How many drams of spirit there must be  
To sell my life unto my friends or foes :  
Yet I love thee.

I know the ways of pleasure, the sweet strains,  
The lullings and the relishes of it ;

The propositions of hot blood and brains ;  
 What mirth and music mean ; what love and wit  
 Have done these twenty hundred years, and more :  
 I know the projects of unbridled store :  
 My stuff is flesh, not brass ; my senses live,  
 And grumble oft, that they have more in me  
 Than he that curbs them, being but one to five :  
 Yet I love thee.

I know all these, and have them in my hand :  
 Therefore not sealed, but with open eyes  
 I fly to thee, and fully understand  
 Both the main sale, and the commodities ;  
 And at what rate and price I have thy love ;  
 With all the circumstances that may move :  
 Yet through the labyrinths, not my grovelling wit,  
 But thy silk-twist let down from heaven to me,  
 Did both conduct and teach me, how by it  
 To climb to thee.

### Affliction.

BROKEN in pieces all asunder,  
 Lord, hunt me not,  
 A thing forgot,  
 Once a poor creature, now a wonder,  
 A wonder tortured in the space  
 Betwixt this world and that of grace.





My thoughts are all a case of knives,  
    Wounding my heart  
    With scatter'd smart ;  
As watering-pots give flowers their lives.  
    Nothing their fury can control,  
    While they do wound and prick my soul.

All my attendants are at strife,  
    Quitting their place  
    Unto my face :  
Nothing performs the task of life :  
    The elements are let loose to fight,  
    And while I live, try out their right.

Oh help, my God ! let not their plot  
    Kill them and me,  
    And also thee,  
Who art my life : dissolve the knot,  
    As the sun scatters by his light  
    All the rebellions of the night.

Then shall those powers, which work for grief,  
    Enter thy pay,  
    And day by day  
Labour thy praise and my relief ;  
    With care and courage building me,  
    Till I reach heaven, and much more, thee.

## Man.

MY GOD, I heard this day,  
That none doth build a stately habitation,  
But he that means to dwell therein.  
What house more stately hath there been,  
Or can be, than is Man? to whose creation  
All things are in decay.

For man is every thing,  
And more : he is a tree, yet bears no fruit ;  
A beast, yet is, or should be more :  
Reason and speech we only bring.  
Parrots may thank us, if they are not mute,  
They go upon the score.

Man is all symmetry,  
Full of proportions, one limb to another,  
And all to all the world besides :  
Each part may call the farthest, brother :  
For head with foot hath private amity,  
And both with moons and tides.

Nothing hath got so far,  
But Man hath caught and kept it, as his prey.  
His eyes dismount the highest star :  
He is in little all the sphere.  
Herbs gladly cure our flesh, because that they  
Find their acquaintance there.

For us the winds do blow ;  
The earth doth rest, heaven move, and fountains flow.  
Nothing we see, but means our good,  
As our delight, or as our treasure :  
The whole is, either our cupboard of food,  
Or cabinet of pleasure.

The stars have us to bed ;  
Night draws the curtain, which the sun withdraws :  
Music and light attend our head.  
All things unto our flesh are kind  
In their descent and being ; to our mind  
In their ascent and cause.

Each thing is full of duty :  
Waters united are our navigation ;  
Distinguished, our habitation ;  
Below, our drink ; above, our meat :  
Both are our cleanliness. Hath one such beauty ?  
Then how are all things neat !

More servants wait on Man,  
Than he'll take notice of : in every path  
He treads down that which doth befriend him,  
When sickness makes him pale and wan.  
Oh mighty love ! Man is one world, and hath  
Another to attend him.

Since then, my God, thou hast  
 So brave a palace built ; O dwell in it,  
 That it may dwell with thee at last !  
 Till then, afford us so much wit,  
 That, as the world serves us, we may serve thee,  
 And both thy servants be.

### Antiphon.

- Chor.* PRAISED be the God of love,  
*Men.* Here below,  
*Angels.* And here above :
- Chor.* Who hath dealt his mercies so,  
*Ang.* To his friend,  
*Men.* And to his foe ;
- Chor.* That both grace and glory tend  
*Ang.* Us of old,  
*Men.* And us in the end.
- Chor.* The great Shepherd of the fold  
*Ang.* Us did make,  
*Men.* For us was sold.
- Chor.* He our foes in pieces brake :  
*Ang.* Him we touch ;  
*Men.* And him we take.

*Chor.* Wherefore since that he is such,

*Ang.* We adore,

*Men.* And we do crouch.

*Chor.* Lord, thy praises shall be more.

*Men.* We have none,

*Ang.* And we no store.

*Chor.* Praised be the God alone

Who hath made of two folds one.

### Unkindness.

LORD, make me coy and tender to offend :

In friendship, first I think, if that agree,

Which I intend,

Unto my friend's intent and end.

I would not use a friend, as I use Thee.

If any touch my friend, or his good name,

It is my honour and my love to free

His blasted fame

From the least spot or thought of blame.

I could not use a friend, as I use Thee.

My friend may spit upon my curious floor :

Would he have gold ? I lend it instantly ;

But let the poor,

And Thou within them starve at door.

I cannot use a friend, as I use Thee.

When that my friend pretendeth to a place,  
I quit my interest, and leave it free :

But when thy grace  
Sues for my heart, I thee displace ;  
Nor would I use a friend, as I use Thee.

Yet can a friend what Thou hast done fulfil ?  
O write in brass, My God upon a tree  
His blood did spill,  
Only to purchase my good will :  
Yet use I not my foes, as I use Thee.

### Life.

I MADE a posy, while the day ran by :  
Here will I smell my remnant out, and tie  
My life within this band.  
But time did beckon to the flowers, and they  
By noon most cunningly did steal away,  
And wither'd in my hand.  
My hand was next to them, and then my heart ;  
I took, without more thinking, in good part  
Time's gentle admonition ;  
Who did so sweetly death's sad taste convey,  
Making my mind to smell my fatal day,  
Yet sugaring the suspicion.

Farewell, dear flowers, sweetly your time ye spent,  
Fit, while ye lived, for smell or ornament,

And after death for cures.

I follow straight without complaints or grief,  
Since if my scent be good, I care not if

It be as short as yours.

### Submission.

BUT that thou art my wisdom, Lord,  
And both mine eyes are thine,  
My mind would be extremely stirr'd  
For missing my design.

Were it not better to bestow  
Some place and power on me?  
Then should thy praises with me grow,  
And share in my degree.

But when I thus dispute and grieve,  
I do resume my sight;  
And pilfering what I once did give,  
Disseize thee of thy right.

How know I, if thou shouldst me raise,  
That I should then raise thee ?  
Perhaps great places and thy praise  
Do not so well agree.

Wherefore unto my gift I stand ;  
I will no more advise :  
Only do thou lend me a hand,  
Since thou hast both mine eyes.

### Justice.

I CANNOT skill of these thy ways :  
Lord, thou didst make me, yet thou woundest me :  
Lord, thou dost wound me, yet thou dost relieve me :  
Lord, thou relievest, yet I die by thee :  
Lord, thou dost kill me, yet thou dost reprove me.

But when I mark my life and praise,  
Thy justice me most fitly pays :  
For I do praise thee, yet I praise thee not :  
My prayers mean thee, yet my prayers stray :  
I would do well, yet sin the hand hath got :  
My soul doth love thee, yet it loves delay.  
I cannot skill of these my ways.



## Charms and Knots.

Who read a chapter when they rise,  
Shall ne'er be troubled with ill eyes.

A poor man's rod, when thou dost ride,  
Is both a weapon and a guide.

Who shuts his hand, hath lost his gold :  
Who opens it, hath it twice told.

Who goes to bed, and doth not pray,  
Maketh two nights to every day.

Who by aspersions throw a stone  
At the head of others, hit their own.

Who looks on ground with humble eyes,  
Finds himself there, and seeks to rise.

When the hair is sweet through pride or lust,  
The powder doth forget the dust.

Take one from ten and what remains ?  
Ten still, if sermons go for gains.

In shallow waters heaven doth show :  
But who drinks on, to hell may go.

## Affliction.

MY GOD, I read this day,  
That planted paradise was not so firm  
As was and is thy floating ark ; whose stay  
And anchor thou art only, to confirm  
And strengthen it in every age,  
When waves do rise, and tempests rage.

. At first we lived in pleasure ;  
Thine own delights thou didst to us impart :  
When we grew wanton, thou didst use displeasure  
To make us thine : yet that we might not part,  
As we at first did board with thee,  
Now thou wouldst taste our misery.

There is but joy and grief ;  
If either will convert us, we are thine :  
Some angels used the first ; if our relief  
Take up the second, then thy double line  
And several baits in either kind  
Furnish thy table to thy mind.

Affliction then is ours ;  
We are the trees whom shaking fastens more,  
While blustering winds destroy the wanton bowers,  
And ruffle all their curious knots and store.

My God, so temper joy and woe,  
That thy bright beams may tame thy bow.

## Mortification.

How soon doth man decay !  
When clothes are taken from a chest of sweets  
To swaddle infants, whose young breath  
Scarce knows the way ;  
Those clouts are little winding-sheets,  
Which do consign and send them unto death.

When boys go first to bed,  
They step into their voluntary graves ;  
Sleep binds them fast ; only their breath  
Makes them not dead.  
Successive nights, like rolling waves,  
Convey them quickly, who are bound for death.

When youth is frank and free,  
And calls for music, while his veins do swell,  
All day exchanging mirth and breath  
In company ;  
That music summons to the knell,  
Which shall befriend him at the house of death.

When man grows staid and wise,  
Getting a house and home, where he may move  
Within the circle of his breath,  
Schooling his eyes ;  
That dumb inclosure maketh love  
Unto the coffin, that attends his death.

When age grows low and weak,  
 Marking his grave, and thawing every year,  
 Till all do melt, and drown his breath  
 When he would speak !  
 A chair or litter shows the bier  
 Which shall convey him to the house of death.

Man, ere he is aware,  
 Hath put together a solemnity,  
 And drest his hearse, while he has breath  
 As yet to spare.  
 Yet, Lord, instruct us so to die,  
 That all these dyings may be life in death.

### Deity.

SWEET were the days, when thou didst lodge with  
 Struggle with Jacob, sit with Gideon, [Lot,  
 Advise with Abraham, when thy power could not  
 Encounter Moses' strong complaints and moan :  
 Thy words were then, Let me alone.

One might have sought and found thee presently  
 At some fair oak, or bush, or cave, or well :  
 Is my God this way ? No, they would reply ;  
 He is to Sinai gone, as we heard tell :  
 List, ye may hear great Aaron's bell.

But now thou dost thyself immure and close  
In some one corner of a feeble heart :  
Where yet both Sin and Satan, thy old foes,  
Do pinch and straiten thee, and use much art  
    To gain thy thirds and little part.

I see the world grows old, when as the heat  
Of thy great love once spread, as in an urn  
Doth closet up itself, and still retreat,  
Cold sin still forcing it, till it return,  
    And calling justice, all things burn.

### Misery.

LORD, let the Angels praise thy name.  
Man is a foolish thing, a foolish thing ;  
    Folly and Sin play all his game.  
His house still burns ; and yet he still doth sing,  
    Man is but grass.  
    He knows it, fill the glass.

How canst thou brook his foolishness ?  
Why, he'll not lose a cup of drink for thee :  
    Bid him but temper his excess ;  
Not he : he knows, where he can better be,  
    As he will swear,  
    Than to serve thee in fear.

What strange pollutions doth he wed,  
 And make his own? as if none knew, but he.  
 No man shall beat into his head  
 That thou within his curtains drawn canst see :  
     They are of cloth,  
     Where never yet came moth.

The best of men, turn but thy hand  
 For one poor minute, stumble at a pin :  
 They would not have their actions scann'd,  
 Nor any sorrow tell them that they sin,  
     Though it be small,  
     And measure not their fall.

They quarrel thee, and would give over  
 The bargain made to serve thee : but thy love  
 Holds them unto it, and doth cover  
 Their follies with the wing of thy mild Dove,  
     Not suffering those  
     Who would, to be thy foes.

My God, man cannot praise thy name :  
 Thou art all brightness, perfect purity :  
 The sun holds down his head for shame,  
 Dead with eclipses, when we speak of thee.  
     How shall infection  
     Presume on thy perfection ?

As dirty hands foul all they touch,                    [fine :  
 And those things most, which are most pure and

So our clay hearts, e'en when we crouch  
To sing thy praises, make them less divine.

Yet either this  
Or none thy portion is.

Man cannot serve thee ; let him go  
And serve the swine : there, there is his delight :

He doth not like this virtue, no ;  
Give him his dirt to wallow in all night ;  
These preachers make  
His head to shoot and ache.

Oh foolish man ! where are thine eyes ?  
How hast thou lost them in a crowd of cares ?

Thou pull'st the rug, and wilt not rise,  
No, not to purchase the whole pack of stars :  
There let them shine,  
Thou must go sleep, or dine.

The bird that sees a dainty bower  
Made in the tree, where she was wont to sit,  
Wonders and sings, but not his power  
Who made the arbour : this exceeds her wit.

But man doth know  
The spring whence all things flow :  
And yet as though he knew it not,  
His knowledge winks, and lets his humours reign :  
They make his life a constant blot,  
And all the blood of God to run in vain.

Ah, wretch ! what verse  
Can thy strange ways rehearse ?

Indeed at first man was a treasure,  
A box of jewels, shop of rarities,  
A ring, whose posy was, My pleasure :  
He was a garden in a paradise :  
Glory and grace  
Did crown his heart and face.

But sin hath fool'd him. Now he is  
A lump of flesh, without a foot or wing  
To raise him to the glimpse of bliss :  
A sick toss'd vessel, dashing on each thing ;  
Nay, his own shelf :  
My God, I mean myself.

### Jordan.

WHEN first my lines of heavenly joys made mention,  
Such was their lustre, they did so excel,  
That I sought out quaint words, and trim invention ;  
My thoughts began to burnish, sprout, and swell,  
Curling with metaphors a plain intention,  
Decking the sense, as if it were to sell.

Thousands of notions in my brain did run,  
Offering their service, if I were not sped :



I often blotted what I had begun ;  
This was not quick enough, and that was dead.  
Nothing could seem too rich to clothe the sun,  
Much less those joys which trample on his head.

As flames do work and wind, when they ascend,  
So did I weave myself into the sense.  
But while I bustled, I might hear a friend  
Whisper, How wide is all this long pretence !  
There is in love a sweetness ready penn'd :  
Copy out only that, and save expense.

### Prayer.

OF what an easy quick access,  
My blessed Lord, art thou ! how suddenly  
May our requests thine ear invade !  
To show that state dislikes not easiness.  
If I but lift mine eyes, my suit is made :  
Thou canst no more not hear, than thou canst die.

Of what supreme almighty power  
Is thy great arm which spans the east and west,  
And tacks the centre to the sphere !  
By it do all things live their measured hour :  
We cannot ask the thing, which is not there,  
Blaming the shallowness of our request.

Of what unmeasurable love  
 Art thou possest, who, when thou couldst not die,  
 Wert fain to take our flesh and curse,  
 And for our sakes in person sin reprove ;  
 That by destroying that which tied thy purse,  
 Thou might'st make way for liberality !

Since then these three wait on thy throne,  
 Ease, Power, and Love ; I value Prayer so,  
 That were I to leave all but one,  
 Wealth, fame, endowments, virtues, all should go ;  
 I and dear Prayer would together dwell,  
 And quickly gain, for each inch lost, an ell.

### Obedience.

MY God, if writings may  
 Convey a lordship any way  
 Whither the buyer and the seller please ;  
 Let it not thee displease,  
 If this poor paper do as much as they.

On it my heart doth bleed  
 As many lines, as there doth need  
 To pass itself and all it hath to thee.

To which I do agree,  
 And here present it as my special deed.

If that hereafter pleasure  
Cavil, and claim her part and measure,  
As if this passed with a reservation,  
Or some such words in fashion ;  
I here exclude the wrangler from thy treasure.

O let thy sacred will  
All thy delight in me fulfil !  
Let me not think an action mine own way,  
But as thy love shall sway,  
Resigning up the rudder to thy skill.

Lord, what is man to thee,  
That thou shouldst mind a rotten tree ?  
Yet since thou canst not choose but see my actions ;  
So great are thy perfections,  
Thou may'st as well my actions guide, as see.

Besides, thy death and blood  
Show'd a strange love to all our good :  
Thy sorrows were in earnest ; no faint proffer,  
Or superficial offer  
Of what we might not take, or be withstood.

Wherefore I all forego :  
To one word only I say, No :  
Where in the deed there was an intimation  
Of a gift or donation,  
Lord, let it now by way of purchase go.

He that will pass his land,  
As I have mine, may set his hand  
And heart unto this deed, when he hath read ;  
And make the purchase spread  
To both our goods, if he to it will stand.

How happy were my part,  
If some kind man would thrust his heart  
Into these lines ; till in heaven's court of rolls  
They were by winged souls  
Enter'd for both, far above their desert !

### Conscience.

PEACE, prattler, do not lour :  
Not a fair look, but thou dost call it foul :  
Not a sweet dish, but thou dost call it sour :

Music to thee doth howl.  
By listening to thy chatting fears  
I have both lost mine eyes and ears.

Prattler, no more, I say :  
My thoughts must work, but like a noiseless sphere.  
Harmonious peace must rock them all the day :

No room for prattlers there.  
If thou persisteth, I will tell thee,  
That I have physic to expel thee.

And the receipt shall be  
 My Saviour's blood : whenever at his board  
 I do but taste it, straight it cleanseth me,  
     And leaves thee not a word ;  
 No, not a tooth or nail to scratch,  
 And at my actions carp, or catch.

Yet if thou talkest still,  
 Besides my physic, know there's some for thee :  
 Some wood and nails to make a staff or bill  
     For those that trouble me :  
 The bloody cross of my dear Lord  
 Is both my physic and my sword.

### §III.

LORD, with what glory wast thou served of old,  
 When Solomon's temple stood and flourished !  
     Where most things were of purest gold ;  
     The wood was all embellished  
 With flowers and carvings, mystical and rare :  
 All show'd the builders, craved the seer's care.  
 Yet all this glory, all this pomp and state,  
 Did not affect thee much, was not thy aim ;  
     Something there was that sow'd debate :  
     Wherefore thou quitt'st thy ancient claim :  
 And now thy architecture meets with sin ;  
 For all thy frame and fabric is within.

There thou art struggling with a peevish heart,  
Which sometimes crosseth thee, thou sometimes it :

The fight is hard on either part.

Great God doth fight, he doth submit.

All Solomon's sea of brass and world of stone  
Is not so dear to thee as one good groan.

And truly brass and stones are heavy things,  
Tombs for the dead, not temples fit for thee :

But groans are quick, and full of wings,

And all their motions upward be ;

And ever as they mount, like larks they sing :

The note is sad, yet music for a king.

### Home.

COME, Lord, my head doth burn, my heart is sick,

While thou dost ever, ever stay :

Thy long deferrings wound me to the quick,

My spirit gaspeth night and day.

O show thyself to me,

Or take me up to thee !

How canst thou stay, considering the pace

The blood did make, which thou didst waste ?

When I behold it trickling down thy face,

I never saw thing make such haste.

O show thyself, &c.

When man was lost, thy pity look'd about,  
To see what help in the earth or sky :  
But there was none ; at least no help without :  
The help did in thy bosom lie.  
O show thyself, &c.

There lay thy Son : and must he leave that nest,  
That hive of sweetness, to remove  
Thralldom from those, who would not at a feast  
Leave one poor apple for thy love ?  
O show thyself, &c.

He did, he came : O my Redeemer dear,  
After all this canst thou be strange ?  
So many years baptized, and not appear ;  
As if thy love could fail or change ?  
O show thyself, &c.

Yet if thou stayest still, why must I stay ?  
My God, what is this world to me ?  
This world of woe ? hence, all ye clouds, away,  
Away ; I must get up and see.  
O show thyself, &c.

What is this weary world ; this meat and drink,  
That chains us by the teeth so fast ?

What is this woman-kind, which I can wink  
Into a blackness and distaste?  
O show thyself, &c.

With one small sigh thou gavest me the other day  
I blasted all the joys about me:  
And scowling on them as they pined away,  
Now come again, said I, and flout me.  
O show thyself, &c.

Nothing but drought and dearth, but bush and brake  
Which way so'er I look, I see.  
Some may dream merrily, but when they wake,  
They dress themselves and come to thee.  
O show thyself, &c.

We talk of harvests; there are no such things,  
But when we leave our corn and hay:  
There is no fruitful year, but that which brings  
The last and loved, though dreadful day.  
O show thyself, &c.

Oh loose this frame, this knot of man untie,  
That my free soul may use her wing,  
Which now is pinion'd with mortality,  
As an entangled, hamper'd thing.  
O show thyself, &c.



What have I left, that I should stay and groan ?  
The most of me to heaven is fled :  
My thoughts and joys are all pack'd up and gone,  
And for their old acquaintance plead.  
O show thyself, &c.

Come, dearest Lord, pass not this holy season,  
My flesh and bones and joints do pray :  
And e'en my verse, when by the rhyme and reason  
The word is Stay, says ever, Come.  
O show thyself to me,  
Or take me up to thee !

### The British Church.

I JOY, dear Mother, when I view  
Thy perfect lineaments, and hue  
Both sweet and bright :  
Beauty in thee takes up her place,  
And dates her letters from thy face,  
When she doth write.

A fine aspect in fit array,  
Neither too mean, nor yet too gay,  
Shows who is best :

Outlandish looks may not compare ;  
For all they either painted are,  
Or else undrest.

She on the hills, which wantonly  
Allureth all in hope to be  
By her preferr'd,  
Hath kiss'd so long her painted shrines,  
That e'en her face by kissing shines,  
For her reward.

She in the valley is so shy  
Of dressing, that her hair doth lie  
About her ears :  
While she avoids her neighbour's pride,  
She wholly goes on the other side,  
And nothing wears.

But, dearest Mother, (what those miss)  
The mean thy praise and glory is,  
And long may be.  
Blessed be God, whose love it was  
To double-moat thee with his grace,  
And none but thee.

## The Quip.

THE merry world did on a day  
With his train-bands and mates agree  
To meet together, where I lay,  
And all in sport to jeer at me.

First, Beauty crept into a rose ;  
Which when I pluckt not, Sir, said she,  
Tell me, I pray, whose hands are those ?  
But thou shalt answer, Lord, for me.

Then Money came, and chinking still,  
What tune is this, poor man ? said he :  
I heard in Music you had skill :  
But thou shalt answer, Lord, for me.

Then came brave Glory puffing by  
In silks that whistled, who but he !  
He scarce allow'd me half an eye :  
But thou shalt answer, Lord, for me.

Then came quick Wit and Conversation,  
And he would needs a comfort be,  
And, to be short, make an oration.  
But thou shalt answer, Lord, for me.

Yet when the hour of thy design  
To answer these fine things shall come ;  
Speak not at large, say, I am thine,  
And then they have their answer home.

### Vanity.

POOR silly soul, whose hope and head lies low ;  
Whose flat delights on earth do creep and grow :  
To whom the stars shine not so fair, as eyes ;  
Nor solid work, as false embroideries ;  
Hark and beware, lest what you now do measure,  
And write for sweet, prove a most sour displeasure.

O hear betimes, lest thy relenting  
    May come too late !  
To purchase heaven for repenting  
    Is no hard rate.  
If souls be made of earthly mould,  
    Let them love gold ;  
    If born on high,  
Let them unto their kindred fly :  
For they can never be at rest,  
Till they regain their ancient nest.  
Then silly soul, take heed ; for earthly joy  
Is but a bubble, and makes thee a boy.

## The Dawning.

AWAKE sad heart, whom sorrow ever drowns :

Take up thine eyes, which feed on earth,  
Unfold thy forehead gather'd into frowns :

Thy Saviour comes, and with him mirth :

Awake, awake ;

And with a thankful heart his comforts take.

But thou dost still lament, and pine, and cry ;

And feel his death, but not his victory.

Arise sad heart ; if thou dost not withstand,

Christ's resurrection thine may be :

Do not by hanging down break from the hand,

Which, as it riseth, raiseth thee :

Arise, arise ;

And with his burial linen dry thine eyes. [grief

Christ left his grave-clothes, that we might, when

Draws tears, or blood, not want a handkerchief.

## Jesu.

JESU is in my heart, his sacred name

Is deeply carved there : but the other week

A great affliction broke the little frame,

E'en all to pieces ; which I went to seek :

And first I found the corner where was J,  
 After, where ES, and next where U was graved.  
 When I had got these parcels, instantly  
 I sat me down to spell them, and perceived  
 That to my broken heart he was I EASE YOU,  
 And to my whole is JESU.

### Business.

CANST be idle? canst thou play,  
 Foolish soul who sinn'd to-day?

Rivers run, and springs each one  
 Know their home, and get them gone :  
 Hast thou tears, or hast thou none ?

If, poor soul, thou hast no tears,  
 Would thou hadst no faults or fears !  
 Who hath these, those ills forbears.

Winds still work : it is their plot,  
 Be the season cold, or hot :  
 Hast thou sighs, or hast thou not ?

If thou hast no sighs or groans,  
 Would thou hadst no flesh and bones !  
 Lesser pains scape greater ones.

But if yet thou idle be,  
 Foolish soul, Who died for thee ?

Who did leave his Father's throne,  
To assume thy flesh and bone?  
Had he life, or had he none?

If he had not lived for thee,  
Thou hadst died most wretchedly;  
And two deaths had been thy fee.

He so far thy good did plot,  
That his own self he forgot.  
Did he die, or did he not?

If he had not died for thee,  
Thou hadst lived in misery.  
Two lives worse than ten deaths be.

And hath any space of breath  
'Twixt his sins and Saviour's death?

He that loseth gold, though dross,  
Tells to all he meets, his cross:  
He that sins, hath he no loss?

He that finds a silver vein,  
Thinks on it, and thinks again:  
Brings thy Saviour's death no gain?

Who in heart not ever kneels,  
Neither sin nor Saviour feels.

## Dialogue.

SWEETEST Saviour, if my soul  
Were but worth the having,  
Quickly should I then control  
Any thought of waving.  
But when all my care and pains  
Cannot give the name of gains  
To thy wretch so full of stains ;  
What delight or hope remains ?

What (child), is the balance thine ?  
Thine the poize and measure ?  
If I say thou shalt be mine,  
Finger not my treasure.  
What the gains in having thee  
Do amount to, only he,  
Who for man was sold, can see,  
That transferr'd the accounts to me.

But as I can see no merit,  
Leading to this favour :  
So the way to fit me for it,  
Is beyond my savour.  
As the reason then is thine ;  
So the way is none of mine :



I disclaim the whole design :  
Sin disclaims and I resign.

That is all, if that I could  
Get without repining ;  
And my clay my creature would  
Follow my resigning :  
That as I did freely part  
With my glory and desert,  
Left all joys to feel all smart——  
Ah ! no more : thou break'st my heart.

### Dulness.

WHY do I languish thus, drooping and dull,  
As if I were all earth ?  
O give me quickness, that I may with mirth  
Praise thee brimful !

The wanton lover in a curious strain  
Can praise his fairest fair ;  
And with quaint metaphors her curled hair  
Curl o'er again :

Thou art my loveliness, my life, my light,  
Beauty alone to me :  
Thy bloody death and undeserved, makes thee  
Pure red and white.

When all perfections as but one appear,  
     That those thy form doth show,  
 The very dust, where thou dost tread and go  
     Makes beauties here ;

Where are my lines then ? my approaches ? views ?  
     Where are my window-songs ?  
 Lovers are still pretending, and e'en wrongs  
     Sharpen their Muse.

But I am lost in flesh, whose sugar'd lies  
     Still mock me, and grow bold :  
 Sure thou didst put a mind there, if I could  
     Find where it lies.

Lord, clear thy gift, that with a constant wit  
     I may but look towards thee :  
 Look only ; for to love thee, who can be,  
     What angel, fit ?

### Love-Joy.

As on a window late I cast mine eye,  
 I saw a vine drop grapes with J and C  
 Anneal'd on every bunch. One standing by  
 Ask'd what it meant. I (who am never loth  
 To spend my judgment) said, it seem'd to me  
 To be the body and the letters both  
 Of Joy and Charity ; Sir, you have not miss'd,  
 The man replied ; It figures JESUS CHRIST.

## Providence.

O SACRED Providence, who from end to end  
Strongly and sweetly movest ! shall I write,  
And not of thee, through whom my fingers bend  
To hold my quill ? shall they not do thee right ?

Of all the creatures both in sea and land,  
Only to Man thou hast made known thy ways,  
And put the pen alone into his hand,  
And made him Secretary of thy praise.

Beasts fain would sing ; birds ditty to their notes ;  
Trees would be tuning on their native lute  
To thy renown : but all their hands and throats  
Are brought to Man, while they are lame and mute.

Man is the world's high Priest : he doth present  
The sacrifice for all ; while they below  
Unto the service mutter an assent,  
Such as springs use that fall, and winds that blow.

He that to praise and laud thee doth refrain,  
Doth not refrain unto himself alone,  
But robs a thousand who would praise thee fain ;  
And doth commit a world of sin in one.

The beasts say, Eat me ; but, if beasts must teach,  
The tongue is yours to eat, but mine to praise.  
The trees say, Pull me : but the hand you stretch  
Is mine to write, as it is yours to raise.

Wherefore, most sacred Spirit, I here present  
For me and all my fellows praise to thee :  
And just it is that I should pay the rent,  
Because the benefit accrues to me.

We all acknowledge both thy power and love  
To be exact, transcendent, and divine ;  
Who dost so strongly and so sweetly move,  
While all things have their will, yet none but thine.

For either thy command, or thy permission  
Lay hands on all : they are thy right and left :  
The first puts on with speed and expedition ;  
The other curbs sin's stealing pace and theft ;

Nothing escapes them both : all must appear,  
And be disposed, and dress'd, and tuned by thee,  
Who sweetly temper'st all. If we could hear  
Thy skill and art, what music would it be !

Thou art in small things great, not small in any :  
Thy even praise can neither rise, nor fall.  
Thou art in all things one, in each thing many :  
For thou art infinite in one, and all.

Tempests are calm to thee, they know thy hand,  
And hold it fast, as children do their fathers,  
Which cry and follow. Thou hast made poor sand  
Check the proud sea, e'en when it swells and gathers.

Thy cupboard serves the world : the meat is set  
Where all may reach : no beast but knows his feed.  
Birds teach us hawking : fishes have their net :  
The great prey on the less, they on some weed.

Nothing engender'd doth prevent his meat ;  
Flies have their table spread, ere they appear ;  
Some creatures have in winter what to eat ;  
Others do sleep, and envy not their cheer.

How finely dost thou times and seasons spin,  
And make a twist checker'd with night and day !  
Which as it lengthens, winds, and winds us in,  
As bowls go on, but turning all the way.

Each creature hath a wisdom for his good.  
The pigeons feed their tender offspring, crying,  
When they are callow ; but withdraw their food,  
When they are fledged, that need may teach them flying.

Bees work for man ; and yet they never bruise  
Their master's flower, but leave it, having done,  
As fair as ever, and as fit to use :  
So both the flower doth stay, and honey run.

Sheep eat the grass, and dung the ground for more :  
Trees after bearing drop their leaves for soil :  
Springs vent their streams, and by expense get store :  
Clouds cool by heat, and baths by cooling boil.

Who hath the virtue to express the rare  
And curious virtues both of herbs and stones ?  
Is there an herb for that ? O that thy care  
Would show a root, that gives expressions !

And if an herb hath power, what have the stars ?  
A rose, besides his beauty, is a cure.  
Doubtless our plagues and plenty, peace and wars,  
Are there much surer than our art is sure.

Thou hast hid metals : man may take them thence ;  
But at his peril : when he digs the place,  
He makes a grave ; as if the thing had sense,  
And threaten'd man, that he should fill the space.

E'en poisons praise thee. Should a thing be lost ?  
Should creatures want, for want of heed, their due ?  
Since where are poisons, antidotes are most ;  
The help stands close, and keeps the fear in view.

The sea, which seems to stop the traveller,  
Is by a ship the speedier passage made.  
The winds, who think they rule the mariner,  
Are ruled by him, and taught to serve his trade.

And as thy house is full, so I adore  
Thy curious art in marshalling thy goods.  
The hills with health abound, the vales with store ;  
The South with marble ; North with furs and woods.

Hard things are glorious ; easy things good cheap ;  
The common all men have ; that which is rare,  
Men therefore seek to have, and care to keep.  
The healthy frosts with summer fruits compare.

Light without wind is glass : warm without weight  
Is wool and furs : cool without closeness, shade :  
Speed without pains, a horse : tall without height,  
A servile hawk : low without loss, a spade.

All countries have enough to serve their need :  
If they seek fine things, thou dost make them run  
For their offence ; and then dost turn their speed  
To be commerce and trade from sun to sun.

Nothing wears clothes, but Man ; nothing doth need  
But he to wear them. Nothing useth fire,  
But Man alone, to show his heavenly breed :  
And only he hath fuel in desire.

When the earth was dry, thou madest a sea of wet :  
When that lay gather'd, thou didst broach the moun-  
When yet some places could no moisture get, [tains :  
The winds grew gardeners, and the clouds good foun-  
[tains.

Rain, do not hurt my flowers; but gently spend  
Your honey drops : press not to smell them here ;  
When they are ripe, their odour will ascend,  
And at your lodging with their thanks appear.

How harsh are thorns to pears ! and yet they make  
A better hedge, and need less reparation.  
How smooth are silks, compared with a stake,  
Or with a stone ! yet make no good foundation.

Sometimes thou dost divide thy gifts to man,  
Sometimes unite. The Indian nut alone  
Is clothing, meat and trencher, drink and can,  
Boat, cable, sail and needle, all in one.

Most herbs that grow in brooks, are hot and dry.  
Cold fruit's warm kernels help against the wind.  
The lemon's juice and rind cure mutually.  
The whey of milk doth loose, the milk doth bind.

Thy creatures leap not, but express a feast,  
Where all the guests sit close, and nothing wants.  
Frogs marry fish and flesh ; bats, bird and beast ;  
Sponges, nonsense and sense ; mines, the earth and  
[plants.

To show thou art not bound, as if thy lot  
Were worse than ours, sometimes thou shiftest hands.  
Most things move the under jaw ; the Crocodile not.  
Most things sleep lying, the Elephant leans or stands.



But who hath praise enough ? nay, who hath any ?  
None can express thy works, but he that knows them ;  
And none can know thy works, which are so many,  
And so complete, but only he that owes them.

All things that are, though they have several ways,  
Yet in their being join with one advice  
To honour thee : and so I give thee praise  
In all my other hymns, but in this twice.

Each thing that is, although in use and name  
It go for one, hath many ways in store  
To honour thee ; and so each hymn thy fame  
Extolleth many ways, yet this one more.

### Hope.

I GAVE to hope a watch of mine : but he  
    An anchor gave to me.  
Then an old prayer-book I did present :  
    And he an optic sent.  
With that I gave a phial full of tears :  
    But he a few green ears.  
Ah, loiterer ! I'll no more, no more I'll bring :  
    I did expect a ring.

### Sins Round.

SORRY I am, my God, sorry I am,  
 That my offences course it in a ring.  
 My thoughts are working like a busy flame,  
 Until their cockatrice they hatch and bring :  
 And when they once have perfected their draughts,  
 My words take fire from my enflamed thoughts.  
 My words take fire from my enflamed thoughts,  
 Which spit it forth like the Sicilian hill.  
 They vent the wares, and pass them with their faults,  
 And by their breathing ventilate the ill.  
 But words suffice not, where are lewd intentions :  
 My hands do join to finish the inventions :  
 My hands do join to finish the inventions :  
 And so my sins ascend three stories high,  
 As Babel grew, before there were dissensions.  
 Yet ill deeds loiter not : for they supply  
 New thoughts of sinning ; wherefore, to my shame,  
 Sorry I am, my God, sorry I am.

### Time.

MEETING with Time, Slack thing, said I,  
 Thy scythe is dull ; whet it for shame.  
 No marvel, Sir, he did reply,  
 If it at length deserve some blame :  
     But where one man would have me grind it,  
     Twenty for one too sharp do find it.

Perhaps some such of old did pass,  
Who above all things loved this life ;  
To whom thy scythe a hatchet was,  
Which now is but a pruning-knife.

Christ's coming hath made man thy debtor,  
Since by thy cutting he grows better.

And in his blessing thou art blest :  
For where thou only wert before  
An executioner at best,  
Thou art a gardener now, and more.

An usher to convey our souls  
Beyond the utmost stars and poles.

And this is that makes life so long,  
While it detains us from our God.  
E'en pleasures here increase the wrong :  
And length of days lengthen the rod.

Who wants the place, where God doth dwell,  
Partakes already half of hell.

Of what strange length must that needs be,  
Which e'en eternity excludes !

Thus far Time heard me patiently :  
Then chafing said, This man deludes :

What do I here before his door ?  
He doth not crave less time, but more.

## Gratefulness.

THOU that hast given so much to me,  
Give one thing more, a grateful heart.

See how thy beggar works on thee

By art.

He makes thy gifts occasion more,

And says, If he in this be crost,

All thou hast given him heretofore

Is lost.

But thou didst reckon, when at first

Thy word our hearts and hands did crave,

What it would come to at the worst

To save.

Perpetual knockings at thy door,

Tears sullyng thy transparent rooms,

Gift upon gift ; much would have more,

And comes.

This notwithstanding, thou went'st on,

And didst allow us all our noise :

Nay thou hast made a sigh and groan

Thy joys.

Not that thou hast not still above

Much better tunes, than groans can make ;

But that these country-airs thy love

Did take.

Wherefore I cry, and cry again ;  
 And in no quiet canst thou be,  
 Till I a thankful heart obtain  
 Of thee :

Not thankful, when it pleaseth me ;  
 As if thy blessings had spare days :  
 But such a heart, whose pulse may be  
 Thy praise.

### Peace.

SWEET Peace, where dost thou dwell? I humbly  
 Let me once know. [crave,

I sought thee in a secret cave,  
 And ask'd, if Peace were there.  
 A hollow wind did seem to answer, No :  
 Go seek elsewhere.

I did ; and going did a rainbow note :  
 Surely, thought I,  
 This is the lace of Peace's coat :  
 I will search out the matter.  
 But while I look'd, the clouds immediately  
 Did break and scatter.

Then went I to a garden, and did spy  
 A gallant flower,  
 The Crown Imperial: Sure, said I,

Peace at the root must dwell.  
But when I digg'd, I saw a worm devour  
What show'd so well.

At length I met a reverend good old man :  
Whom when for Peace  
I did demand, he thus began ;  
There was a Prince of old  
At Salem dwelt, who lived with good increase  
Of flock and fold.

He sweetly lived ; yet sweetness did not save  
His life from foes.  
But after death out of his grave  
There sprang twelve stalks of wheat :  
Which many wondering at, got some of those  
To plant and set.

It prosper'd strangely, and did soon disperse  
Through all the earth :  
For they that taste it do rehearse,  
That virtue lies therein ;  
A secret virtue, bringing peace and mirth  
By flight of sin.

Take of this grain, which in my garden grows,  
And grows for you ;  
Make bread of it : and that repose

And peace, which every where  
With so much earnestness you do pursue  
Is only there.

### Confession.

OH, what a cunning guest  
Is this same grief! within my heart I made  
Closets; and in them many a chest;  
And like a master in my trade,  
In those chests, boxes; in each box, a till:  
Yet grief knows all, and enters when he will.

No screw, no piercer can  
Into a piece of timber work and wind,  
As God's afflictions into man,  
When he a torture hath design'd.  
They are too subtle for the subtlest hearts;  
And fall, like rheums, upon the tenderest parts.

We are the earth; and they,  
Like moles within us, heave, and cast about:  
And till they foot and clutch their prey,  
They never cool, much less give out.  
No smith can make such locks, but they have keys;  
Closets are halls to them; and hearts, highways.

Only an open breast  
Doth shut them out, so that they cannot enter;  
Or, if they enter, cannot rest,

But quickly seek some new adventure.  
Smooth open hearts no fastening have ; but fiction  
Doth give a hold and handle to affliction.

Wherefore my faults and sins,  
Lord, I acknowledge ; take thy plagues away :  
For since confession pardon wins,  
I challenge here the brightest day,  
The clearest diamond : let them do their best,  
They shall be thick and cloudy to my breast.

### Giddiness.

OH, what a thing is man ! how far from power,  
From settled peace and rest !  
He is some twenty several men at least  
Each several hour.

One while he counts of heaven as of his treasure :  
But then a thought creeps in,  
And calls him coward, who for fear of sin  
Will lose a pleasure.

Now he will fight it out, and to the wars ;  
Now eat his bread in peace,  
And snudge in quiet : now he scorns increase ;  
Now all day spares.



He builds a house, which quickly down must go,  
As if a whirlwind blew  
And crush'd the building : and 'tis partly true,  
His mind is so.

O what a sight were Man, if his attires  
Did alter with his mind ;  
And, like a Dolphin's skin, his clothes combined  
With his desires !

Surely if each one saw another's heart,  
There would be no commerce,  
No sale or bargain pass : all would disperse,  
And live apart.

Lord, mend or rather make us : one creation  
Will not suffice our turn :  
Except thou make us daily, we shall spurn  
Our own salvation.

### The Bunch of Grapes.

Joy, I did lock thee up : but some bad man  
Hath let thee out again :  
And now, methinks, I am where I began  
Seven years ago : one vogue and vein,  
One air of thoughts usurps my brain,

I did towards Canaan draw ; but now I am  
Brought back to the Red Sea, the sea of shame.

For as the Jews of old by God's command  
Travell'd, and saw no town ;  
So now each Christian hath his journeys spann'd :  
Their story pens and sets us down.  
A single deed is small renown.  
God's works are wide, and let in future times ;  
His ancient justice overflows our crimes.

Then have we too our guardian fires and clouds ;  
Our Scripture-dew drops fast :  
We have our sands and serpents, tents and shrouds ;—  
Alas ! our murmurings come not last.  
But where's the cluster ? where's the taste  
Of mine inheritance ? Lord, if I must borrow,  
Let me as well take up their joy, as sorrow.

But can he want the grape, who hath the wine ?  
I have their fruit and more.  
Blessed be God, who prosper'd Noah's vine,  
And made it bring forth grapes good store.  
But much more him I must adore,  
Who of the law's sour juice sweet wine did make,  
E'en God himself, being pressed for my sake.

### Love unknown.

DEAR friend, sit down, the tale is long and sad :  
 And in my faintings I presume your love  
 Will more comply, than help. A Lord I had,  
 And have, of whom some grounds, which may im-  
 I hold for two lives, and both lives in me. [prove,  
 To him I brought a dish of fruit one day,  
 And in the middle placed my heart. But he

(I sigh to say)

Look'd on a servant, who did know his eye  
 Better than you know me, or (which is one)  
 Than I myself. The servant instantly  
 Quitting the fruit, seized on my heart alone,  
 And threw it in a font, wherein did fall  
 A stream of blood, which issued from the side  
 Of a great rock : I well remember all,  
 And have good cause : there it was dipt and dyed,  
 And wash'd, and wrung : the very wringing yet  
 Enforceth tears. Your heart was foul, I fear.  
 Indeed 'tis true. I did and do commit  
 Many a fault more than my lease will bear ;  
 Yet still ask'd pardon, and was not denied.  
 But you shall hear. After my heart was well,  
 And clean and fair, as I one even-tide

(I sigh to tell)

Walk'd by myself abroad, I saw a large  
And spacious furnace flaming, and thereon  
A boiling caldron, round about whose verge  
Was in great letters set AFFLICTION.  
The greatness show'd the owner. So I went  
To fetch a sacrifice out of my fold,  
Thinking with that, which I did thus present,  
To warm his love, which I did fear grew cold.  
But as my heart did tender it, the man  
Who was to take it from me, slipt his hand,  
And threw my heart into the scalding pan ;  
My heart that brought it (do you understand ?)  
The offerer's heart. Your heart was hard, I fear.  
Indeed 'tis true. I found a callous matter  
Began to spread and to expatiate there :  
But with a richer drug, than scalding water,  
I bathed it often, e'en with holy blood,  
Which at a board, while many drank bare wine,  
A friend did steal into my cup for good,  
E'en taken inwardly, and most divine  
To supple hardnesses. But at the length  
Out of the caldron getting, soon I fled  
Unto my house, where to repair the strength  
Which I had lost, I hasted to my bed :  
But when I thought to sleep out all these faults,  
(I sigh to speak)  
I found that some had stuff'd the bed with thoughts,

I would say thorns. Dear, could my heart not break,  
 When with my pleasures e'en my rest was gone?  
 Full well I understood, who had been there :  
 For I had given the key to none, but one :  
 It must be he. Your heart was dull, I fear.  
 Indeed a slack and sleepy state of mind  
 Did oft possess me, so that when I pray'd,  
 Though my lips went, my heart did stay behind.  
 But all my scores were by another paid,  
 Who took the debt upon him. Truly, Friend,  
 For ought I hear, your Master shows to you  
 More favour than you wot of. Mark the end.  
 The Font did only, what was old, renew :  
 The Caldron suppld, what was grown too hard :  
 The Thorns did quicken, what was grown too dull :  
 All did but strive to mend, what you had marr'd.  
 Wherefore be cheer'd, and praise him to the full  
 Each day, each hour, each moment of the week,  
 Who fain would have you be, new, tender, quick.

### Man's Medley.

HARK, how the birds do sing,  
 And woods do ring.  
 All creatures have their joy, and man hath his.  
 Yet if we rightly measure,  
 Man's joy and pleasure  
 Rather hereafter, than in present, is.

To this life things of sense  
    Make their pretence :  
In the other Angels have a right by birth :  
    Man ties them both alone,  
        And makes them one,         [earth.  
With the one hand touching heaven, with the other

    In soul he mounts and flies,  
        In flesh he dies.  
He wears a stuff whose thread is coarse and round,  
    But trimm'd with curious lace,  
        And should take place  
After the trimming, not the stuff and ground.

    Not, that he may not here  
        Taste of the cheer :  
But as birds drink, and straight lift up their head ;  
    So must he sip, and think  
        Of better drink  
He may attain to, after he is dead.

    But as his joys are double,  
        So is his trouble:  
He hath two winters, other things but one :  
    Both frosts and thoughts do nip :  
        And bite his lip ;  
And he of all things fears two deaths alone.

Yet even the greatest griefs  
    May be reliefs,  
Could he but take them right, and in their ways.  
    Happy is he, whose heart  
    Hath found the art  
To turn his double pains to double praise.

### The Storm.

IF as the winds and waters here below  
    Do fly and flow,  
My sighs and tears as busy were above ;  
    Sure they would move  
And much affect thee, as tempestuous times  
Amaze poor mortals, and object their crimes.  
Stars have their storms, e'en in a high degree,  
    As well as we.  
A throbbing conscience spurred by remorse  
    Hath a strange force :  
It quits the earth, and mounting more and more,  
Dares to assault thee, and besiege thy door.  
There it stands knocking, to thy music's wrong,  
    And drowns the song.  
Glory and honour are set by till it  
    An answer get.  
Poets have wrong'd poor storms: such days are best ;  
They purge the air without, within the breast.

## Paradise.

I BLESS thee, Lord, because I GROW  
Among thy trees, which in a ROW  
To thee both fruit and order OW.

What open force, or hidden CHARM  
Can blast my fruit, or bring me HARM,  
While the inclosure is thine ARM?

Inclose me still for fear I START.  
Be to me rather sharp and TART,  
Than let me want thy hand and ART.

When thou dost greater judgments SPARE,  
And with thy knife but prune and PARE,  
E'en fruitful trees more fruitful ARE.

Such sharpness shows the sweetest FRIEND:  
Such cuttings rather heal than REND:  
And such beginnings touch their END.

## The Method.

POOR heart, lament.  
For since thy God refuseth still,  
There is some rub, some discontent,  
Which cools his will.



Thy Father could  
Quickly effect, what thou dost move ;  
For he is Power : and sure he would ;  
For he is Love.

Go search this thing,  
Tumble thy breast, and turn thy book :  
If thou hadst lost a glove or ring,  
Wouldst thou not look ?

What do I see  
Written above there ? Yesterday  
I did behave me carelessly,  
When I did pray.

And should God's ear  
To such indifferents chained be,  
Who do not their own motions hear ?  
Is God less free ?

But stay ! what's there ?  
Late when I would have something done,  
I had a motion to forbear,  
Yet I went on.

And should God's ear,  
Which needs not man, be tied to those  
Who hear not him, but quickly hear  
His utter foes ?

Then once more pray :  
Down with thy knees, up with thy voice :  
Seek pardon first, and God will say,  
Glad heart, rejoice.

### Divinity.

As men, for fear the stars should sleep and nod,  
And trip at night, have spheres supplied ;  
As if a star were duller than a clod,  
Which knows his way without a guide :

Just so the other heaven they also serve,  
Divinity's transcendent sky :  
Which with the edge of wit they cut and carve.  
Reason triumphs, and faith lies by.

Could not that wisdom, which first broach'd the wine,  
Have thicken'd it with definitions ?  
And jagg'd his seamless coat, had that been fine,  
With curious questions and divisions ?

But all the doctrine, which he taught and gave,  
Was clear as heaven, from whence it came.  
At least those beams of truth, which only save,  
Surpass in brightness any flame.

Love God, and love your neighbour. Watch and pray.  
 Do as you would be done unto.  
 O dark instructions, e'en as dark as day!  
 Who can these Gordian knots undo?

But he doth bid us take his blood for wine.  
 Bid what he please; yet I am sure,  
 To take and taste what he doth there design,  
 Is all that saves, and not obscure.

Then burn thy Epicycles, foolish man;  
 Break all thy spheres, and save thy head;  
 Faith needs no staff of flesh, but stoutly can  
 To heaven alone both go, and lead.

### Ephesians IV. 30.

*Grieve not the Holy Spirit, &c.*

AND art thou grieved, sweet and sacred Dove,  
 When I am sour,  
 And cross thy love?  
 Grieved for me? the God of strength and power  
 Grieved for a worm, which when I tread,  
 I pass away and leave it dead?

Then weep, mine eyes, the God of love doth grieve :  
    Weep foolish heart,  
    And weeping live ;  
For death is dry as dust. Yet if we part,  
    End as the night, whose sable hue  
    Your sins express ; melt into dew.

When saucy mirth shall knock or call at door,  
    Cry out, Get hence,  
    Or cry no more.

Almighty God doth grieve, he puts on sense :  
    I sin not to my grief alone,  
    But to my God's too ; he doth groan.

Oh take thy lute, and tune it to a strain,  
    Which may with thee  
    All day complain.

There can no discord but in ceasing be.  
    Marbles can weep ; and surely strings  
    More bowels have, than such hard things.

Lord, I adjudge myself to tears and grief,  
    E'en endless tears  
    Without relief.

If a clear spring for me no time forbears,  
    But runs, although I be not dry ;  
    I am no Crystal, what shall I ?

Yet if I wail not still, since still to wail  
Nature denies ;  
And flesh would fail,  
If my deserts were masters of mine eyes :  
Lord, pardon, for thy Son makes good  
My want of tears with store of blood.

### The Family.

WHAT doth this noise of thoughts within my heart,  
As if they had a part ?  
What do these loud complaints and pulling fears,  
As if there were no rule or ears ?  
But, Lord, the house and family are thine,  
Though some of them repine.  
Turn out these wranglers, which defile thy seat :  
For where thou dwellest all is neat.  
First Peace and Silence all disputes control,  
Then Order plays the soul ;  
And giving all things their set forms and hours,  
Makes of wild woods sweet walks and bowers.  
Humble Obedience near the door doth stand,  
Expecting a command :  
Than whom in waiting nothing seems more slow,  
Nothing more quick when she doth go.

Joys oft are there, and griefs as oft as joys ;  
 But griefs without a noise :  
 Yet speak they louder, than distemper'd fears :  
 What is so shrill as silent tears ?

This is thy house, with these it doth abound :  
 And where these are not found,  
 Perhaps thou comest sometimes, and for a day ;  
 But not to make a constant stay.

### The Sire.

CONTENT thee, greedy heart.  
 Modest and moderate joys to those, that have  
 Title to more hereafter when they part,  
 Are passing brave.  
 Let the upper springs into the low  
 Descend and fall, and thou dost flow.

What though some have a fraught  
 Of cloves and nutmegs, and in cinnamon sail ?  
 If thou hast wherewithal to spice a draught,  
 When griefs prevail,  
 And for the future time art heir  
 To the Isle of spices, Is't not fair ?

To be in both worlds full  
 Is more than God was, who was hungry here.  
 Wouldst thou his laws of fasting disannul?  
     Enact good cheer?  
 Lay out thy joy, yet hope to save it?  
 Wouldst thou both eat thy cake, and have it?

Great joys are all at once;  
 But little do reserve themselves for more:  
 Those have their hopes; these what they have  
     And live on score:                   [renounce,  
 Those are at home; these journey still,  
 And meet the rest on Sion's hill.

Thy Saviour sentenced joy,  
 And in the flesh condemn'd it as unfit,  
 At least in lump: for such doth oft destroy;  
     Whereas a bit  
 Doth 'tice us on to hopes of more,  
 And for the present health restore.

A Christian's state and case  
 Is not a corpulent, but a thin and spare,  
 Yet active strength: whose long and bony face  
     Content and care  
 Do seem to equally divide,  
 Like a pretender, not a bride.

Wherefore sit down, good heart ;  
 Grasp not at much, for fear thou lovest all.  
 If comforts fell according to desert,  
     They would great frosts and snows destroy :  
 For we should count, Since the last joy.

Then close again the seam,  
 Which thou hast open'd ; do not spread thy robe  
 In hope of great things. Call to mind thy dream,  
     An earthly globe,  
 On whose meridian was engraven,  
 These seas are tears, and heaven the haven.

### Artillery.

As I one evening sat before my cell,  
 Methought a star did shoot into my lap.  
 I rose, and shook my clothes, as knowing well,  
 That from small fires comes oft no small mishap :  
     When suddenly I heard one say,  
     Do as thou usest, disobey,  
     Expel good motions from thy breast,  
 Which have the face of fire, but end in rest.

I, who had heard of music in the spheres,  
 But not of speech in stars, began to muse :  
 But turning to my God, whose ministers  
 The star and all things are ; If I refuse,



Dread Lord, said I, so oft my good;  
 Then I refuse not e'en with blood  
 To wash away my stubborn thought:  
 For I will do, or suffer what I ought.

But I have also stars and shooters too,  
 Born where thy servants both artilleries use.  
 My tears and prayers night and day do woo,  
 And work up to thee; yet thou dost refuse.

Not but I am (I must say still)  
 Much more obliged to do thy will,  
 Than thou to grant mine: but because  
 Thy promise now hath e'en set thee thy laws.

Then we are shooters both, and thou dost deign  
 To enter combat with us, and contest  
 With thine own clay. But I would parley fain:  
 Shun not my arrows, and behold my breast.

Yet if thou shunest, I am thine:  
 I must be so, if I am mine.  
 There is no articing with thee:  
 I am but finite, yet thine infinitely.

### Church-Rents and Schisms.

BRAVE rose, (alas!) where art thou? in the chair,  
 Where thou didst lately so triumph and shine,  
 A worm doth sit, whose many feet and hair  
 Are the more foul, the more thou wert divine.

This, this hath done it, this did bite the root  
And bottom of the leaves : which when the wind  
Did once perceive, it blew them under foot,  
Where rude unhallow'd steps do crush and grind  
Their beauteous glories. Only shreds of thee,  
And those all bitten, in thy chair I see.

Why doth my Mother blush ? is she the rose,  
And shows it so ? Indeed Christ's precious blood  
Gave you a colour once ; which when your foes  
Thought to let out, the bleeding did you good,  
And made you look much fresher than before.  
But when debates and fretting jealousies  
Did worm and work within you more and more,  
Your colour faded, and calamities  
Turned your ruddy into pale and bleak :  
Your health and beauty both began to break.

Then did your several parts unloose and start :  
Which when your neighbours saw, like a north wind  
They rushed in, and cast them in the dirt  
Where Pagans tread. O Mother dear and kind,  
Where shall I get me eyes enough to weep,  
As many eyes as stars ? since it is night,  
And much of Asia and Europe fast asleep,  
And e'en all Africk ; would at least I might  
With these two poor ones lick up all the dew  
Which falls by night, and pour it out for you !

## Justice.

O DREADFUL justice, what a fright and terror  
Wast thou of old,  
When sin and error  
Did show and shape thy looks to me,  
And through their glass discolour thee!  
He that did but look up, was proud and bold.

The dishes of thy balance seem'd to gape,  
Like two great pits;  
The beam and scape  
Did like some tottering engine show:  
Thy hand above did burn and glow,  
Daunting the stoutest hearts, the proudest wits.

But now that Christ's pure veil presents the sight,  
I see no fears:  
Thy hand is white,  
Thy scales like buckets, which attend  
And interchangeably descend,  
Lifting to heaven from this well of tears.

For where before thou still didst call on me,  
Now I still touch  
And harp on thee.

God's promises hath made thee mine :  
Why should I justice now decline ?  
Against me there is none, but for me much.

### The Pilgrimage.

I TRAVELL'D on, seeing the hill, where lay  
My expectation.

A long it was and weary way.  
The gloomy cave of Desperation  
I left on the one, and on the other side  
The rock of Pride.

And so I came to fancy's meadow strow'd  
With many a flower :  
Fain would I here have made abode,  
But I was quicken'd by my hour.  
So to care's copse I came, and there got through  
With much ado.

That led me to the wild of passion ; which  
Some call the world ;  
A wasted place, but sometimes rich.  
Here I was robb'd of all my gold,  
Save one good Angel, which a friend had tied  
Close to my side.

At length I got unto the gladsome hill,  
    Where lay my hope,  
    Where lay my heart ; and climbing still,  
    When I had gain'd the brow and top,  
A lake of brackish waters on the ground  
    Was all I found.

With that abash'd and struck with many a sting  
    Of swarming fears,  
    I fell, and cried, Alas, my King ;  
    Can both the way and end be tears ?  
Yet taking heart I rose, and then perceived  
    I was deceived :

My hill was further : so I flung away,  
    Yet heard a cry  
    Just as I went, None goes that way  
    And lives : If that be all, said I,  
After so foul a journey death is fair,  
    And but a chair.

### The Wald-fast.

I THREATEN'D to observe the strict decree  
    Of my dear God with all my power and might :  
    But I was told by one, it could not be ;  
Yet I might trust in God to be my light.

Then will I trust, said I, in him alone.

Nay, e'en to trust in him, was also his :

We must confess, that nothing is our own.

Then I confess that he my succour is :

But to have nought is ours, not to confess

That we have nought. I stood amazed at this,

Much troubled, till I heard a friend express,

That all things were more ours by being his.

What Adam had, and forfeited for all,

Christ keepeth now, who cannot fail or fall.

### Complaining.

Do not beguile my heart,

Because thou art

My power and wisdom. Put me not to shame,

Because I am

Thy clay that weeps, thy dust that calls:

Thou art the Lord of glory ;

The deed and story

Are both thy due : but I a silly fly,

That live or die,

According as the weather falls.

Art thou all justice, Lord ?  
Shows not thy word  
More attributes ? Am I all throat or eye,  
To weep or cry ?  
Have I no parts but those of grief ?

Let not thy wrathful power  
Afflict my hour,  
My inch of life : or let thy gracious power  
Contract my hour,  
That I may climb and find relief.

### The Discharge.

BUSY inquiring heart, what wouldst thou know ?  
Why dost thou pry,  
And turn, and leer, and with a licorous eye  
Look high and low ;  
And in thy lookings stretch and grow ?

Hast thou not made thy counts, and summ'd up all ?  
Did not thy heart  
Give up the whole, and with the whole depart ?  
Let what will fall :  
That which is past who can recall ?

Thy life is God's, thy time to come is gone,  
And is his right.

He is thy night at noon : he is at night  
Thy noon alone.

The crop is his, for he hath sown.

And well it was for thee, when this befell,  
That God did make

Thy business his, and in thy life partake :  
For thou canst tell,

If it be his once, all is well.

Only the present is thy part and fee.

And happy thou,

If, though thou didst not beat thy future brow,

Thou couldst well see

What present things required of thee.

They ask enough ; why shouldst thou further go ?

Raise not the mud

Of future depths, but drink the clear and good.

Dig not for woe

In times to come ; for it will grow.

Man and the present fit : if he provide,

He breaks the square.

This hour is mine : if for the next I care,

I grow too wide,

And do encroach upon death's side :



For death each hour environs and surrounds.  
    He that would know  
And care for future chances, cannot go  
    Unto those grounds,  
    But thro' a churchyard which them bounds.  
Things present shrink and die : but they that spend  
    . Their thoughts and sense  
On future grief, do not remove it thence,  
    But it extend,  
    And draw the bottom out an end.  
God chains the dog till night : wilt loose the chain,  
    And wake thy sorrow ?  
Wilt thou forestall it, and now grieve to-morrow,  
    And then again  
    Grieve over freshly all thy pain ?  
Either grief will not come : or if it must,  
    Do not forecast :  
And while it cometh, it is almost past.  
    Away distrust :  
    My God hath promised ; he is just.

### Praise.

KING of glory, King of peace,  
    I will love thee :  
And that love may never cease,  
    I will move thee.

Thou hast granted my request,  
    Thou hast heard me ;  
Thou didst note my working breast,  
    Thou hast spared me.

Wherefore with my utmost art  
    I will sing thee,  
And the cream of all my heart  
    I will bring thee.

Though my sins against me cried,  
    Thou didst clear me ;  
And alone, when they replied,  
    Thou didst hear me.

Seven whole days, not one in seven,  
    I will praise thee.  
In my heart, though not in Heaven,  
    I can raise thee.

Thou grew'st soft and moist with tears,  
    Thou relentedst.  
And when Justice call'd for fears,  
    Thou dissentedst.

Small it is, in this poor sort  
    To enrol thee :  
E'en eternity is too short  
    To extol thee.

## An Offering.

COME, bring thy gift. If blessings were as slow  
As men's returns, what would become of fools?  
What hast thou there? a heart? but is it pure?  
Search well and-see; for hearts have many holes.  
Yet one pure heart is nothing to bestow:  
In Christ two natures met to be thy cure.

O that within us hearts had propagation,  
Since many gifts do challenge many hearts!  
Yet one, if good, may title to a number;  
And single things grow fruitful by deserts.  
In public judgments one may be a nation,  
And fence a plague, while others sleep and slumber.

But all I fear is, lest thy heart displease,  
As neither good, nor one: so oft divisions  
Thy lusts have made, and not thy lusts alone;  
Thy passions also have their set partitions.  
These parcel out thy heart: recover these,  
And thou mayst offer many gifts in one.

There is a balsam, or indeed a blood, [close  
Dropping from heaven, which doth both cleanse and  
All sorts of wounds; of such strange force it is.  
Seek out this All-heal, and seek no repose,  
Until thou find, and use it to thy good:  
Then bring thy gift; and let thy hymn be this;

SINCE my sadness  
Into gladness,  
Lord, thou dost convert,  
O accept  
What thou hast kept,  
As thy due desert.

Had I many,  
Had I any,  
(For this heart is none)  
All were thine  
And none of mine,  
Surely thine alone.

Yet thy favour  
May give savour,  
To this poor oblation ;  
And it raise  
To be thy praise,  
And be my salvation.

### Longing.

WITH sick and famish'd eyes,  
With doubling knees and weary bones,  
To thee my cries,  
To thee my groans,  
To thee my sighs, my tears ascend :  
No end ?

My throat, my soul is hoarse ;  
My heart is wither'd like a ground  
Which thou dost curse.  
My thoughts turn round,  
And make me giddy ; Lord, I fall,  
Yet call.

From thee all pity flows.  
Mothers are kind, because thou art,  
And dost dispose  
To them a part :  
Their infants, them ; and they suck thee  
More free.

Bowels of pity, hear !  
Lord of my soul, love of my mind,  
Bow down thine ear !  
Let not the wind  
Scatter my words, and in the same  
Thy name !

Look on my sorrows round !  
Mark well my furnace ! O what flames,  
What heats abound !  
What griefs, what shames !  
Consider, Lord ; Lord, bow thine ear,  
And hear !

Lord Jesu, thou didst bow  
Thy dying head upon the tree :  
O be not now  
More dead to me !  
Lord, hear ! Shall he that made the ear  
Not hear ?

Behold, thy dust doth stir ;  
It moves, it creeps, it aims at thee :  
Wilt thou defer  
To succour me,  
Thy pile of dust, wherein each crumb  
Says, Come ?

To thee help appertains.  
Hast thou left all things to their course,  
And laid the reins  
Upon the horse ?  
Is all lock'd ? hath a sinner's plea  
No key ?

Indeed the world's thy book,  
Where all things have their leaf assign'd :  
Yet a meek look  
Hath interlined.  
Thy board is full, yet humble guests  
Find nests.

Thou tarriest, while I die,  
And fall to nothing: thou dost reign,  
And rule on high,  
While I remain  
In bitter grief: yet am I styled  
Thy child.

Lord, didst thou leave thy throne,  
Not to relieve? how can it be,  
That thou art grown  
Thus hard to me?  
Were sin alive, good cause there were  
To bear.

But now both sin is dead,  
And all thy promises live and bide.  
That wants his head;  
These speak and chide,  
And in thy bosom pour my tears,  
As theirs.

Lord JESU, hear my heart,  
Which hath been broken now so long,  
That every part  
Hath got a tongue!  
Thy beggars grow; rid them away  
To-day.

My love, my sweetness, hear !  
By these thy feet, at which my heart  
Lies all the year,  
Pluck out thy dart,  
And heal my troubled breast which cries,  
Which dies.

### The Bag.

AWAY despair ; my gracious Lord doth hear.  
Though winds and waves assault my keel,  
He doth preserve it : he doth steer,  
E'en when the boat seems most to reel.  
Storms are the triumph of his art :  
Well may he close his eyes, but not his heart.  
Hast thou not heard, that my Lord JESUS died ?  
Then let me tell thee a strange story.  
The God of power, as he did ride  
In his majestic robes of glory,  
Resolved to light ; and so one day  
He did descend, undressing all the way.  
The stars his tire of light and rings obtain'd,  
The cloud his bow, the fire his spear,  
The sky his azure mantle gain'd.  
And when they ask'd, what he would wear ;  
He smiled, and said as he did go,  
He had new clothes a making here below.



When he was come, as travellers are wont,  
He did repair unto an inn.  
Both then and after, many a brunt  
He did endure to cancel sin :  
And having given the rest before,  
Here he gave up his life to pay our score.

But as he was returning, there came one  
That ran upon him with a spear.  
He who came hither all alone,  
Bringing nor man, nor arms, nor fear,  
Received the blow upon his side,  
And straight he turn'd, and to his brethren cried,

If ye have any thing to send or write,  
(I have no bag, but here is room)  
Unto my father's hands and sight  
(Believe me) it shall safely come.  
That I shall mind, what you impart ;  
Look, you may put it very near my heart.

Or if hereafter any of my friends  
Will use me in this kind, the door  
Shall still be open ; what he sends  
I will present, and somewhat more,  
Not to his hurt. Sighs will convey  
Any thing to me. Hark despair, away.

## The Jews.

POOR nation, whose sweet sap and juice  
 Our cyons have purloin'd, and left you dry :  
 Whose streams we got by the Apostles' sluice,  
 And use in baptism, while ye pine and die :  
 Who by not keeping once, became a debtor ;  
 And now by keeping lose the letter :

Oh that my prayers ! mine, alas !  
 Oh that some Angel might a trumpet sound :  
 At which the Church falling upon her face  
 Should cry so loud, until the trump were drown'd,  
 And by that cry of her dear Lord obtain,  
 That your sweet sap might come again !

## The Collar.

I STRUCK the board, and cried, no more ;  
 I will abroad.  
 What? shall I ever sigh and pine ?  
 My lines and life are free ; free as the road,  
 Loose as the wind, as large as store.  
 Shall I be still in suit ?  
 Have I no harvest but a thorn  
 To let me blood, and not restore  
 What I have lost with cordial fruit ?

Sure there was wine,  
Before my sighs did dry it : there was corn,  
Before my tears did drown it.  
Is the year only lost to me ?  
Have I no bays to crown it ?  
No flowers, no garlands gay ? all blasted ?  
All wasted ?  
Not so, my heart : but there is fruit,  
And thou hast hands.  
Recover all thy sigh-blown age  
On double pleasures : leave thy cold dispute  
Of what is fit, and not forsake thy cage,  
Thy rope of sands,  
Which petty thoughts have made, and made to thee  
Good cable, to enforce and draw,  
And be thy law,  
While thou didst wink and wouldst not see.  
Away ; take heed :  
I will abroad.  
Call in thy death's-head there : tie up thy fears.  
He that forbears  
To suit and serve his need,  
Deserves his load.  
But as I raved and grew more fierce and wild  
At every word,  
Methought I heard one calling, Child :  
And I replied, My Lord.

## The Glimpse.

WHITHER away delight ?  
Thou camest but now ; wilt thou so soon depart,  
And give me up to night ?  
For many weeks of lingering pain and smart  
But one half hour of comfort for my heart ?

Methinks delight should have  
More skill in music, and keep better time.  
Wert thou a wind or wave,  
They quickly go and come with lesser crime :  
Flowers look about, and die not in their prime.

Thy short abode and stay  
Feeds not, but adds to the desire of meat.  
Lime begg'd of old (they say)  
A neighbour spring to cool his inward heat ;  
Which by the spring's access grew much more great.

In hope of thee my heart  
Pick'd here and there a crumb, and would not die ;  
But constant to his part,  
When as my fears foretold this, did reply,  
A slender thread a gentle guest will tie.

Yet if the heart that wept  
Must let thee go, return when it doth knock.  
Although thy heap be kept  
For future times, the droppings of the stock  
May oft break forth, and never break the lock.

If I have more to spin,  
The wheel shall go, so that thy stay be short.  
Thou know'st how grief and sin  
Disturb the work. O make me not their sport,  
Who by thy coming may be made a court!

### Assurance.

O SPITEFUL bitter thought!  
Bitterly spiteful thought! Couldst thou invent  
So high a torture? Is such poison bought?  
Doubtless, but in the way of punishment,  
When wit contrives to meet with thee,  
No such rank poison can there be.

Thou said'st but even now,  
That all was not so fair, as I conceived,  
Betwixt my God and me; that I allow  
And coin large hopes; but, that I was deceived:  
Either the league was broke, or near it;  
And, that I had great cause to fear it.

And what to this ? What more  
Could poison, if it had a tongue, express ?  
What is thy aim ? Wouldst thou unlock the door  
To cold despairs, and gnawing pensiveness ?  
Wouldst thou raise devils ? I see, I know,  
I writ thy purpose long ago.

But I will to my Father,  
Who heard thee say it. O most gracious Lord,  
If all the hope and comfort that I gather,  
Were from myself, I had not half a word,  
Not half a letter to oppose  
What is objected by my foes.

But thou art my desert :  
And in this league, which now my foes invade,  
Thou art not only to perform thy part,  
But also mine ; as when the league was made,  
Thou didst at once thyself indite,  
And hold my hand, while I did write.

Wherefore if thou canst fail,  
Then can thy truth and I : but while rocks stand,  
And rivers stir, thou canst not shrink or quail :  
Yea, when both rocks and all things shall disband,  
Then shalt thou be my rock and tower,  
And make their ruin praise thy power.

Now foolish thought go on,  
Spin out thy thread, and make thereof a coat  
To hide thy shame : for thou hast cast a bone,  
Which bounds on thee, and will not down thy throat.  
What for itself love once began,  
Now love and truth will end in man.

### The Call.

COME, my Way, my Truth, my Life :  
Such a Way, as gives us breath :  
Such a Truth, as ends all strife :  
Such a Life, as killeth death.

Come, my Light, my Feast, my Strength :  
Such a Light, as shows a feast :  
Such a Feast, as mends in length :  
Such a Strength, as makes his guest.

Come, my Joy, my Love, my Heart :  
Such a Joy, as none can move :  
Such a Love, as none can part :  
Such a Heart, as joys in love.

## Clasping of Hands.

LORD, thou art mine, and I am thine,  
If mine I am : and thine much more,  
Than I or ought, or can be mine.  
Yet to be thine, doth me restore ;  
So that again I now am mine,  
And with advantage mine the more.  
Since this being mine, brings with it thine,  
And thou with me dost thee restore.  
    If I without thee would be mine,  
    I neither should be mine nor thine.

Lord, I am thine, and thou art mine :  
So mine thou art, that something more  
I may presume thee mine, than thine.  
For thou didst suffer to restore  
Not thee, but me, and to be mine :  
And with advantage mine the more,  
Since thou in death wast none of thine,  
Yet then as mine didst me restore.  
    O be mine still ! still make me thine ;  
    Or rather make no Thine and Mine !



## Praise.

LORD, I will mean and speak thy praise,  
Thy praise alone.

My busy heart shall spin it all my days :  
And when it stops for want of store,  
Then will I wring it with a sigh or groan,  
That thou mayst yet have more.

When thou dost favour any action,  
It runs, it flies :

All things concur to give it a perfection.

That which had but two legs before, [rise  
When thou dost bless, hath twelve : one wheel doth  
To twenty then, or more.

But when thou dost on business blow,  
It hangs, it clogs :

Not all the teams of Albion in a row  
Can hale or draw it out of door.

Legs are but stumps, and Pharaoh's wheels but logs,  
And struggling hinders more.

Thousands of things do thee employ  
In ruling all

This spacious globe : Angels must have their joy,  
Devils their rod, the sea his shore,

The winds their stint : and yet when I did call,  
Thou heard'st my call, and more.

I have not lost one single tear :  
    But when mine eyes  
Did weep to heaven, they found a bottle there  
    (As we have boxes for the poor)  
Ready to take them in ; yet of a size  
    That would contain much more.

But after thou hadst slipt a drop  
    From thy right eye  
(Which there did hang like streamers near the top  
    Of some fair church, to show the sore  
And bloody battle which thou once didst try)  
    The glass was full and more.

Wherefore I sing. Yet since my heart,  
    Though press'd, runs thin ;  
O that I might some other hearts convert,  
    And so take up at use good store :  
That to thy chests there might be coming in  
    Both all my praise, and more !

### Joseph's Coat.

WOUNDED I sing, tormented I endite,  
Thrown down I fall into a bed, and rest :  
Sorrow hath changed its note : such is his will  
Who changeth all things, as him pleaseth best.

For well he knows, if but one grief and smart  
Among my many had his full career,  
Sure it would carry with it e'en my heart,  
And both would run until they found a bier

To fetch the body ; both being due to grief.  
But he hath spoil'd the race ; and given to anguish  
One of Joy's coats, 'ticing it with relief  
To linger in me, and together languish.

I live to show his power, who once did bring  
My joys to weep, and now my griefs to sing.

### The Pulley.

WHEN God at first made man,  
Having a glass of blessing standing by ;  
Let us (said he) pour on him all we can :  
Let the world's riches, which dispersed lie,  
Contract into a span.

So strength first made a way ;  
Then beauty flow'd, then wisdom, honour, pleasure :  
When almost all was out, God made a stay,  
Perceiving that alone, of all his treasure,  
Rest in the bottom lay.

For if I should (said he)  
 Bestow this jewel also on my creature,  
 He would adore my gifts instead of me,  
 And rest in Nature, not the God of Nature :  
 So both should losers be.

Yet let him keep the rest,  
 But keep them with repining restlessness :  
 Let him be rich and weary, that at least,  
 If goodness lead him not, yet weariness  
 May toss him to my breast.

### The Priesthood.

BLEST order, which in power dost so excel,  
 That with the one hand thou liftest to the sky,  
 And with the other throwest down to hell  
 In thy just censures ; fain would I draw nigh ;  
 Fain put thee on, exchanging my lay-sword  
 For that of the holy word.

But thou art fire, sacred and hallow'd fire ;  
 And I but earth and clay : should I presume  
 To wear thy habit, the severe attire  
 My slender compositions might consume.  
 I am both foul and brittle, much unfit  
 To deal in holy Writ.

Yet have I often seen, by cunning hand  
And force of fire, what curious things are made  
Of wretched earth. Where once I scorn'd to stand,  
That earth is fitted by the fire and trade  
Of skilful artists, for the boards of those  
Who make the bravest shows.

But since those great ones, be they ne'er so great,  
Come from the earth, from whence those vessels come;  
So that at once both feeder, dish, and meat,  
Have one beginning and one final sum :  
I do not greatly wonder at the sight,  
If earth in earth delight.

But the holy men of God such vessels are,  
As serve him up, who all the world commands.  
When God vouchsafeth to become our fare,  
Their hands convey him, who conveys their hands :  
O what pure things, most pure must those things be,  
Who bring my God to me !

Wherefore I dare not, I, put forth my hand  
To hold the Ark, although it seem to shake  
Through the old sins and new doctrines of our land.  
Only, since God doth often vessels make  
Of lowly matter for high uses meet,  
I throw me at his feet.

There will I lie, until my Maker seek  
 For some mean stuff whereon to show his skill :  
 Then is my time. The distance of the meek  
 Doth flatter power. Lest good come short of ill  
 In praising might, the poor do by submission  
     What pride by opposition.

### The Search.

WHITHER, O, whither art thou fled,  
     My Lord, my love ?  
 My searches are my daily bread ;  
     Yet never prove.

My knees pierce the earth, mine eyes the sky :  
     And yet the sphere  
 And centre both to me deny  
     That thou art there.

Yet can I mark how herbs below  
     Grow green and gay ;  
 As if to meet thee they did know,  
     While I decay.

Yet can I mark how stars above  
                                Simper and shine,  
As having keys unto thy love,  
                                While poor I pine.

I sent a sigh to seek thee out,  
                                Deep drawn in pain,  
Wing'd like an arrow : but my scout  
                                Returns in vain.

I turn'd another (having store)  
                                Into a groan,  
Because the search was dumb before :  
                                But all was one.

Lord, dost thou some new fabric mould  
                                Which favour wins,  
And keeps thee present, leaving the old  
                                Unto their sins ?

Where is my God ? what hidden place  
                                Conceals thee still ?  
What covert dare eclipse thy face ?  
                                Is it thy will ?

O let not that of any thing :  
                                Let rather brass,  
Or steel, or mountains be thy ring,  
                                And I will pass.

Thy will such an intrenching is,  
                                 As passeth thought :  
 To it all strength, all subtilties  
                                 Are things of nought.

Thy will such a strange distance is,  
                                 As that to it  
 East and West touch, the poles do kiss,  
                                 And parallels meet.

Since then my grief must be as large  
                                 As is thy space,  
 Thy distance from me ; see my charge,  
                                 Lord, see my case.

O take these bars, these lengths, away ;  
                                 Turn, and restore me :  
 Be not Almighty, let me say,  
                                 Against, but for me.

When thou dost turn, and wilt be near ;  
                                 What edge so keen,  
 What point so piercing can appear  
                                 To come between ?

For as thy absence doth excel  
                                 All distance known :  
 So doth thy nearness bear the bell,  
                                 Making two one.



## Grief.

O WHO will give me tears? Come all ye springs,  
Dwell in my head and eyes: come, clouds, and rain:  
My grief hath need of all the watery things,  
That nature hath produced. Let every vein  
Suck up a river to supply mine eyes,  
My weary weeping eyes too dry for me,  
Unless they get new conduits, new supplies,  
To bear them out, and with my state agree.  
What are two shallow fords, two little spouts  
Of a less world? the greater is but small,  
A narrow cupboard for my griefs and doubts,  
Which want provision in the midst of all.  
Verses, ye are too fine a thing, too wise  
For my rough sorrows: cease, be dumb and mute,  
Give up your feet and running to mine eyes,  
And keep your measures for some lover's lute,  
Whose grief allows him music and a rhyme:  
For mine excludes both measure, tune, and time.  
Alas, my God!

## The Cross.

WHAT is this strange and uncouth thing  
To make me sigh, and seek, and faint, and die,  
Until I had some place, where I might sing,  
    And serve thee; and not only I,  
But all my wealth, and family might combine  
To set thy honour up, as our design.

And then when after much delay,  
Much wrestling, many a combat, this dear end,  
So much desired, is given, to take away  
    My power to serve thee: to unbend  
All my abilities, my designs confound,  
And lay my threatenings bleeding on the ground.

One ague dwelleth in my bones,  
Another in my soul (the memory  
What I would do for thee, if once my groans  
    Could be allowed for harmony)  
I am in all a weak disabled thing,  
Save in the sight thereof, where strength doth sting.

Besides, things sort not to my will,  
E'en when my will doth study thy renown:  
Thou turnest the edge of all things on me still,  
    Taking me up to throw me down:

So that, e'en when my hopes seem to be sped,  
I am to grief alive, to them as dead.

To have my aim, and yet to be  
Farther from it than when I bent my bow ;  
To make my hopes my torture, and the fee  
Of all my woes another woe,  
Is in the midst of delicates to need,  
And e'en in Paradise to be a weed.

Ah, my dear Father, ease my smart !  
These contrarieties crush me : these cross actions  
Do wind a rope about, and cut my heart :  
And yet since these thy contradictions  
Are properly a cross felt by thy Son,  
With but four words, my words, Thy will be done.

### The Flower.

How fresh, O Lord, how sweet and clean  
Are thy returns ! e'en as the flowers in spring ;  
To which, besides their own demean,  
The late-past frosts tributes of pleasure bring.  
Grief melts away  
Like snow in May,  
As if there were no such cold thing.

Who would have thought my shrivel'd heart  
 Could have recover'd greenness? It was gone  
 Quite under ground; as flowers depart  
 To see their mother-root, when they have blown;  
     Where they together,  
     All the hard weather,  
 Dead to the world, keep house unknown.

These are thy wonders, Lord of power,  
 Killing and quickening, bringing down to hell  
 And up to heaven in an hour;  
 Making a chiming of a passing bell.

    We say amiss,  
     This or that is:  
 Thy word is all, if we could spell.



O that I once past changing were,  
 Fast in thy Paradise, where no flower can wither!  
 Many a spring I shoot up fair,  
 Offering at heaven, growing and groaning thither:  
     Nor doth my flower  
     Want a spring-shower,  
 My sins and I joining together.

But while I grow in a straight line,  
 Still upwards bent, as if heaven were mine own,  
 Thy anger comes, and I decline:  
 What frost to that? what pole is not the zone

Where all things burn,  
When thou dost turn,  
And the least frown of thine is shown ?

And now in age I bud again,  
After so many deaths I live and write ;  
I once more smell the dew and rain,  
And relish versing : O my only light,  
It cannot be  
That I am he,  
On whom thy tempests fell at night.

These are thy wonders, Lord of love,  
To make us see we are but flowers that glide :  
Which when we once can find and prove,  
Thou hast a garden for us, where to bide.  
Who would be more,  
Swelling through store,  
Forfeit their Paradise by their pride.

### Dotage.

FALSE glozing pleasures, casks of happiness,  
Foolish night-fires, women's and children's wishes,  
Chases in arras, gilded emptiness,  
Shadows well mounted, dreams in a career,  
Embroider'd lies, nothing between two dishes ;  
These are the pleasures here.

True earnest sorrows, rooted miseries,  
Anguish in grain, vexations ripe and blown,  
Sure-footed griefs, solid calamities,  
Plain demonstrations, evident and clear,  
Fetching their proofs e'en from the very bone ;  
    These are the sorrows here.

But oh the folly of distracted men,  
Who griefs in earnest, joys in jest pursue ;  
Preferring, like brute beasts, a loathsome den  
Before a court, e'en that above so clear,  
Where are no sorrows, but delights more true  
    Than miseries are here !

### The Sun.

LET foreign nations of their language boast,  
What fine variety each tongue affords :  
I like our language, as our men and coast ;  
Who cannot dress it well, want wit, not words.  
How neatly do we give one only name  
To parent's issue and the sun's bright star !  
A son is light and fruit ; a fruitful flame  
Chasing the father's dimness, carried far  
From the first man in the East, to fresh and new  
Western discoveries of posterity.

So in one word our Lord's humility  
We turn upon him in a sense most true :  
For what Christ once in humbleness began,  
We him in glory call, The Son of Man.

### A True Hymn.

My joy, my life, my crown !  
My heart was meaning all the day,  
Somewhat it fain would say :  
And still it runneth muttering up and down  
With only this, My joy, my life, my crown !

Yet slight not these few words ;  
If truly said, they may take part  
Among the best in art.  
The fineness which a hymn or psalm affords,  
Is, when the soul unto the lines accords.

He who craves all the mind,  
And all the soul, and strength, and time,  
If the words only rhyme,  
Justly complains, that somewhat is behind  
To make his verse, or write a hymn in kind.

Whereas if the heart be moved,  
Although the verse be somewhat scant,  
God doth supply the want.

As when the heart says (sighing to be approved)  
O, could I love ! and stops ; God writeth, Loved.

### The Answer.

My comforts drop and melt away like snow :  
I shake my head, and all the thoughts and ends,  
Which my fierce youth did bandy, fall and flow  
Like leaves about me, or like summer friends,  
Flies of estates and sunshine. But to all,  
Who think me eager, hot, and undertaking,  
But in my prosecutions slack and small ;  
As a young exhalation, newly waking,  
Scorns his first bed of dirt, and means the sky ;  
But cooling by the way, grows palsy and slow,  
And settling to a cloud, doth live and die  
In that dark state of tears ; to all, that so  
Show me, and set me, I have one reply,  
Which they that know the rest, know more than I.

### A Dialogue-Anthem.

CHRISTIAN, DEATH.

*Chr.* ALAS, poor death ! where is thy glory ?  
Where is thy famous force, thy ancient sting ?  
*Dea.* Alas, poor mortal, void of story,  
Go spell and read how I have kill'd thy King.



*Chr.* Poor death ! and who was hurt thereby ?  
 Thy curse being laid on him makes thee accurst.  
*Dea.* Let losers talk, yet thou shalt die ;  
 These arms shall crush thee. *Chr.* Spare not,  
 do thy worst.  
 I shall be one day better than before :  
 Thou so much worse, that thou shalt be no more.

### The Water-Course.

THOU who dost dwell and linger here below,  
 Since the condition of this world is frail,  
 Where of all plants afflictions soonest grow ;  
 If troubles overtake thee, do not wail :

For who can look for less that loveth { Life.  
 { Strife.

But rather turn the pipe, and water's course  
 To serve thy sins, and furnish thee with store  
 Of sovereign tears, springing from true remorse :  
 That so in pureness thou mayst him adore

Who gives to man, as he sees fit, { Salvation.  
 { Damnation.

## Self-Condernnation.

THOU who condemnest Jewish hate,  
For choosing Barabbas a murderer  
    Before the Lord of glory ;  
    Look back upon thine own estate,  
Call home thine eye (that busy wanderer)  
    That choice may be thy story.

He that doth love, and love amiss  
This world's delights before true Christian joy,  
    Hath made a Jewish choice :  
    The world an ancient murderer is ;  
Thousands of souls it hath and doth destroy  
    With her enchanting voice.

He that hath made a sorry wedding  
Between his soul and gold, and hath preferr'd  
    False gain before the true,  
    Hath done what he condemns in reading :  
For he hath sold for money his dear Lord,  
    And is a Judas-Jew.

Thus we prevent the last great day, [sion,  
And judge ourselves. That light which sin and pas-  
    Did before dim and choke,  
    When once those snuffs are ta'en away,  
Shines bright and clear, e'en unto condernnation,  
    Without excuse or cloak.

### Bitter-Sweet.

AH, my dear angry Lord,  
Since thou dost love, yet strike ;  
Cast down, yet help afford ;  
Sure I will do the like.

I will complain, yet praise ;  
I will bewail, approve :  
And all my sour-sweet days  
I will lament, and love.

### The Glance.

WHEN first thy sweet and gracious eye  
Vouchsafed e'en in the midst of youth and night  
To look upon me, who before did lie

Weltering in sin ;

I felt a sugar'd strange delight,  
Passing all cordials made by any art,  
Bedew, embalm, and overrun my heart,  
And take it in.

Since that time many a bitter storm  
My soul hath felt, e'en able to destroy,  
Had the malicious and ill-meaning harm  
His swing and sway :

But still thy sweet original joy,  
 Sprung from thine eye, did work within my soul,  
 And surging griefs, when they grew bold, control,  
 And got the day.

If thy first glance so powerful be,  
 A mirth but open'd, and seal'd up again ;  
 What wonders shall we feel, when we shall see  
 Thy full-eyed love !

When thou shalt look us out of pain,  
 And one aspect of thine spend in delight  
 More than a thousand suns disburse in light,  
 In heaven above.

### The Twenty-third Psalm.

THE God of love my shepherd is,  
 And he that doth me feed :  
 While he is mine, and I am his,  
 What can I want or need ?

He leads me to the tender grass,  
 Where I both feed and rest ;  
 Then to the streams that gently pass :  
 In both I have the best.

Or if I stray, he doth convert,  
 And bring my mind in frame :  
 And all this not for my desert,  
 But for his holy name.

Yea, in death's shady black abode  
Well may I walk, not fear :  
For thou art with me, and thy rod  
To guide, thy staff to bear.

Nay, thou dost make me sit and dine,  
E'en in my enemies' sight ;  
My head with oil, my cup with wine  
Runs over day and night.

Surely thy sweet and wondrous love  
Shall measure all my days ;  
And as it never shall remove,  
So neither shall my praise.

### Mary Magdalen.

WHEN blessed Mary wiped her Saviour's feet,  
(Whose precepts she had trampled on before)  
And wore them for a jewel on her head,  
Showing his steps should be the street,  
Wherein she thenceforth evermore  
With pensive humbleness would live and tread :  
She being stain'd herself, why did she strive  
To make him clean, who could not be defiled ?  
Why kept she not her tears for her own faults,  
And not his feet ? though we could dive  
In tears like seas, our sins are piled  
Deeper than they, in words, and works, and thoughts.

Dear soul, she knew who did vouchsafe and deign  
To bear her filth ; and that her sins did dash  
E'en God himself: wherefore she was not loath,  
As she had brought wherewith to stain,  
So to bring in wherewith to wash :  
And yet in washing one, she washed both.

### Aaron.

HOLINESS on the head,  
Light and perfections on the breast,  
Harmonious bells below, raising the dead  
To lead them unto life and rest.  
Thus are true Aarons drest.

Profaneness in my head,  
Defects and darkness in my breast,  
A noise of passions ringing me for dead  
Unto a place where is no rest :  
Poor priest thus am I drest.

Only another head  
I have, another heart and breast,  
Another music, making live, not dead,  
Without whom I could have no rest :  
In him I am well drest.

Christ is my only head,  
 My alone only heart and breast,  
 My only music, striking me e'en dead ;  
 That to the old man I may rest,  
 And be in him new drest.

So holy in my head,  
 Perfect and light in my dear breast,  
 My doctrine tuned by Christ, (who is not dead,  
 But lives in me while I do rest)  
 Come, people ; Aaron's drest.

### The Odour.

2 COR. II.

How sweetly doth My Master sound ! My Master !  
 As ambergris leaves a rich scent  
 Unto the taster :  
 So do these words a sweet content,  
 An oriental fragrancency, My Master.  
 With these all day I do perfume my mind,  
 My mind e'en thrust into them both ;  
 That I might find  
 What cordials make this curious broth,  
 This broth of smells that feeds and fats my mind.  
 My Master, shall I speak ? O that to thee  
 My servant were a little so,

As flesh may be ;  
 That these two words might creep and grow  
 To some degree of spiciness to thee !

Then should the Pomander, which was before  
 A speaking sweet, mend by reflection,  
 And tell me more :  
 For pardon of my imperfection  
 Would warm and work it sweeter than before.

For when My Master, which alone is sweet,  
 And e'en in my unworthiness pleasing,  
 Shall call and meet,  
 My servant, as thee not displeasing,  
 That call is but the breathing of the sweet.

This breathing would with gains by sweetening me  
 (As sweet things traffic when they meet)  
 Return to thee.  
 And so this new commerce and sweet  
 Should all my life employ, and busy me.

### The Fail.

IF we could see below  
 The sphere of virtue, and each shining grace,  
 As plainly as that above doth show ;  
 This were the better sky, the brighter place.



God hath made stars the foil  
To set off virtues ; griefs to set off sinning :  
Yet in this wretched world we toil,  
As if grief were not foul, nor virtue winning.

### The Forerunners.

THE harbingers are come. See, see their mark ;  
White is their colour, and behold my head.  
But must they have my brain ? must they dispark  
Those sparkling notions, which therein were bred ?  
Must dulness turn me to a clod ?  
Yet have they left me, Thou art still my God.

Good men ye be, to leave me my best room,  
E'en all my heart, and what is lodged there :  
I pass not, I, what of the rest become,  
So, thou art still my God, be out of fear.

He will be pleased with that ditty ;  
And if I please him, I write fine and witty.

Farewell sweet phrases, lovely metaphors :  
But will ye leave me thus ? when ye before  
Of stews and brothels only knew the doors,  
Then did I wash you with my tears, and more,  
Brought you to Church well drest and clad :  
My God must have my best, e'en all I had.

Lovely enchanting language, sugarcane,  
Honey of roses, whither wilt thou fly?  
Hath some fond lover 'ticed thee to thy bane?  
And wilt thou leave the Church, and love a sty?  
    Fy, thou wilt soil thy broider'd coat,  
And hurt thyself, and him that sings the note.

Let foolish lovers, if they will love dung,  
With canvas, not with arras clothe their shame:  
Let folly speak in her own native tongue.  
True beauty dwells on high: ours is a flame  
    But borrow'd thence to light us thither.  
Beauty and beauteous words should go together.

Yet if you go, I pass not; take your way:  
For, Thou art still my God, is all that ye  
Perhaps with more embellishment can say.  
Go, birds of spring: let winter have his fee;  
    Let a bleak paleness chalk the door,  
So all within be livelier than before.

### The Rose.

PRESS me not to take more pleasure  
    In this world of sugar'd lies,  
And to use a larger measure  
    Than my strict, yet welcome size.

First, there is no pleasure here :  
    Colour'd griefs indeed there are,  
Blushing woes, that look as clear,  
    As if they could beauty spare.

Or if such deceits there be,  
    Such delights I meant to say ;  
There are no such things to me,  
    Who have pass'd my right away.

But I will not much oppose  
    Unto what you now advise :  
Only take this gentle rose,  
    And therein my answer lies.

What is fairer than a rose ?  
    What is sweeter ? yet it purgeth.  
Purgings enmity disclose,  
    Enmity forbearance urgeth.

If then all that worldlings prize  
    Be contracted to a rose ;  
Sweetly there indeed it lies,  
    But it biteth in the close.

So this flower doth judge and sentence  
    Worldly joys to be a scourge :  
For they all produce repentance,  
    And repentance is a purge.

But I health, not physic choose :  
    Only though I you oppose,  
Say that fairly I refuse,  
    For my answer is a rose.

### Discipline.

THROW away thy rod,  
Throw away thy wrath :  
    O my God,  
Take the gentle path.

For my heart's desire  
Unto thine is bent :  
    I aspire  
To a full consent.

Not a word or look  
I affect to own,  
    But by book.  
And thy book alone.

Though I fail, I weep :  
Though I halt in pace,  
    Yet I creep  
To the throne of grace.

Then let wrath remove ;  
Love will do the deed :  
    For with love  
Stony hearts will bleed.

Love is swift of foot ;  
Love's a man of war,  
    And can shoot,  
And can hit from far.

Who can 'scape his bow ?  
That which wrought on thee,  
    Brought thee low,  
Needs must work on me.

Throw away thy rod ;  
Though man frailties hath,  
    Thou art God :  
Throw away thy wrath.

### The Invitation.

COME ye hither all, whose taste  
    Is your waste ;  
Save your cost, and mend your fare.  
God is here prepared and dress'd,  
    And the feast,  
God, in whom all dainties are.

Come ye hither all, whom wine  
Doth define,  
Naming you not to your good :  
Weep what ye have drunk amiss,  
And drink this,  
Which before ye drink is blood.

Come ye hither all, whom pain  
Doth arraign,  
Bringing all your sins to sight :  
Taste and fear not : God is here  
In this cheer,  
And on sin doth cast the fright.

Come ye hither all, whom joy  
Doth destroy,  
While ye graze without your bounds :  
Here is joy that drowneth quite  
Your delight,  
As a flood the lower grounds.

Come ye hither all, whose love  
Is your dove,  
And exalts you to the sky :  
Here is love, which, having breath  
E'en in death,  
After death can never die.

Lord I have invited all,  
    And I shall  
Still invite, still call to thee :  
For it seems but just and right  
    In my sight,  
Where is all, there all should be.

### The Banquet.

WELCOME sweet and sacred cheer,  
    Welcome dear ;  
With me, in me, live and dwell :  
For thy neatness passeth sight,  
    Thy delight  
Passeth tongue to taste or tell.  
O what sweetness from the bowl  
    Fills my soul,  
Such as is, and makes divine !  
Is some star (fled from the sphere)  
    Melted there,  
As we sugar melt in wine ?  
Or hath sweetness in the bread  
    Made a head  
To subdue the smell of sin,  
Flowers, and gums, and powders giving  
    All their living,  
Lest the enemy should win ?

Doubtless neither star nor flower  
Hath the power  
Such a sweetness to impart :  
Only God, who gives perfumes,  
Flesh assumes,  
And with it perfumes my heart.

But as Pomanders and wood  
Still are good,  
Yet being bruised are better scented ;  
God, to show how far his love  
Could improve,  
Here, as broken, is presented.

When I had forgot my birth,  
And on earth  
In delights of earth was drown'd ;  
God took blood, and needs would be  
Spilt with me,  
And so found me on the ground.

Having raised me to look up,  
In a cup  
Sweetly he doth meet my taste.  
But I still being low and short,  
Far from court,  
Wine becomes a wing at last.



For with it alone I fly  
    To the sky :  
Where I wipe mine eyes, and see  
What I seek, for what I sue ;  
    Him I view  
Who hath done so much for me.

Let the wonder of this pity  
    Be my ditty,  
And take up my lines and life :  
Hearken under pain of death,  
    Hands and breath,  
Strive in this, and love the strife.

### The Posy.

LET wits contest,  
And with their words and posies windows fill :  
    Less than the least  
Of all thy mercies, is my posy still.

    This on my ring,  
This by my picture, in my book I write ;  
    Whether I sing,  
Or say, or dictate, this is my delight.

Invention rest ;  
Comparisons go play ; wit use thy will :  
Less than the least  
Of all God's mercies, is my posy still.

### A Parody.

SOUL'S joy, when thou art gone,  
And I alone,  
Which cannot be,  
Because thou dost abide with me,  
And I depend on thee ;

Yet when thou dost suppress  
The cheerfulness  
Of thy abode,  
And in my powers not stir abroad,  
But leave me to my load :

O what a damp and shade  
Doth me invade !  
No stormy night  
Can so afflict or so affright  
As thy eclipsed light.

Ah Lord! do not withdraw,  
Lest want of awe  
Make sin appear;  
And when thou dost but shine less clear,  
Say that thou art not here.

And then what life I have,  
While sin doth rave,  
And falsely boast,  
That I may seek, but thou art lost;  
Thou and alone thou know'st.

O what a deadly cold  
Doth me infold!  
I half believe,  
That Sin says true: but while I grieve,  
Thou comest and dost relieve.

### The Elixir.

TEACH me, my God and King,  
In all things thee to see,  
And what I do in any thing,  
To do it as for thee:

Not rudely, as a beast,  
To run into an action ;  
But still to make thee prepossest,  
And give it his perfection.

A man that looks on glass,  
On it may stay his eye ;  
Or if he pleaseth, through it pass,  
And then the heaven espy.

All may of thee partake :  
Nothing can be so mean,  
Which with this tincture (for thy sake)  
Will not grow bright and clean.

A servant with this clause  
Makes drudgery divine :  
Who sweeps a room, as for thy laws,  
Makes that and the action fine.

This is the famous stone  
That turneth all to gold :  
For that which God doth touch and own.  
Cannot for less be told.

## A Wreath.

A WREATHED garland of deserved praise,  
Of praise deserved, unto thee I give,  
I give to thee, who knowest all my ways,  
My crooked winding ways, wherein I live,  
Wherein I die, not live ; for life is straight,  
Straight as a line, and ever tends to thee,  
To thee, who art more far above deceit,  
Than deceit seems above simplicity.  
Give me simplicity, that I may live,  
So live and like, that I may know thy ways,  
Know them and practise them : then shall I give  
For this poor wreath, give thee a crown of praise.

## Death.

DEATH, thou wast once an uncouth hideous thing,  
Nothing but bones,  
The sad effect of sadder groans :  
Thy mouth was open, but thou couldst not sing.  
For we considered thee as at some six  
Or ten years hence,  
After the loss of life and sense,  
Flesh being turn'd to dust, and bones to sticks.

We look'd on this side of thee, shooting short ;  
 Where we did find  
 The shells of fledge souls left behind,  
 Dry dust, which sheds no tears, but may extort.

But since our Saviour's death did put some blood  
 Into thy face :

Thou art grown fair and full of grace,  
 Much in request, much sought for, as a good.

For we do now behold thee gay and glad,  
 As at doomsday ;

When souls shall wear their new array,  
 And all thy bones with beauty shall be clad.

Therefore we can go die as sleep, and trust  
 Half that we have

Unto an honest faithful grave ;  
 Making our pillows either down, or dust.

### Doomsday.

COME away,  
 Make no delay.

Summon all the dust to rise,  
 Till it stir, and rub the eyes ;  
 While this member jogs the other,  
 Each one whispering, Live you, brother ?

Come away,  
Make this the day.  
Dust, alas! no music feels,  
But thy trumpet: then it kneels,  
As peculiar notes and strains  
Cure Tarantula's raging pains.

Come away,  
O make no stay!  
Let the graves make their confession,  
Lest at length they plead possession:  
Flesh's stubbornness may have  
Read that lesson to the grave.

Come away,  
Thy flock doth stray.  
Some to the winds their body lend,  
And in them may drown a friend:  
Some in noisome vapours grow  
To a plague and public woe.

Come away,  
Help our decay.  
Man is out of order hurl'd,  
Parcell'd out to all the world.  
Lord, thy broken consort raise,  
And the music shall be praise.

## Judgment.

ALMIGHTY Judge, how shall poor wretches brook  
 Thy dreadful look,  
 Able a heart of iron to appal,  
 When thou shalt call  
 For every man's peculiar book ?

What others mean to do, I know not well ;  
 Yet I hear tell,  
 That some will turn thee to some leaves therein  
 So void of sin,  
 That they in merit shall excel.

But I resolve, when thou shalt call for mine,  
 That to decline,  
 And thrust a Testament into thy hand :  
 Let that be scann'd.  
 There thou shalt find my faults are thine.

## Heaven.

O WHO will show me those delights on high ?  
 ECHO. I.  
 Thou Echo, thou art mortal, all men know.  
 ECHO. No.



Wert thou not born among the trees and leaves ?

ECHO. Leaves.

And are there any leaves, that still abide ?

ECHO. Bide.

What leaves are they ? impart the matter wholly.

ECHO. Holy.

Are holy leaves the Echo then of bliss ?

ECHO. Yes.

Then tell me, what is that supreme delight ?

ECHO. Light.

Light to the mind : what shall the will enjoy ?

ECHO. Joy.

But are there cares and business with the pleasure ?

ECHO. Leisure.

Light, joy, and leisure ; but shall they persevere ?

ECHO. Ever.

## Love.

LOVE bade me welcome : yet my soul drew back,  
Guilty of dust and sin.

But quick-eyed Love, observing me grow slack

From my first entrance in,

Drew nearer to me, sweetly questioning,

If I lack'd any thing.

A guest, I answer'd, worthy to be here :

Love said, you shall be he.

I the unkind, ungrateful? Ah my dear,

I cannot look on thee.

Love took my hand, and smiling did reply,

Who made the eyes but I?

Truth Lord, but I have marr'd them : let my shame

Go where it doth deserve.

And know you not, says Love, who bore the blame?

My dear, then I will serve.

You must sit down, says Love, and taste my meat :

So I did sit and eat.

---

GLORY BE TO GOD ON HIGH, AND ON EARTH  
PEACE, GOOD-WILL TOWARDS MEN.

## The Church Militant.

---

ALMIGHTY Lord, who from thy glorious throne  
Seest and rulest all things e'en as one :  
The smallest ant or atom knows thy power,  
Known also to each minute of an hour :  
Much more do Common-weals acknowledge thee,  
And wrap their policies in thy decree,  
Complying with thy counsels, doing nought  
Which doth not meet with an eternal thought.  
But above all, thy Church and Spouse doth prove  
Not the decrees of power, but bands of love.  
Early didst thou arise to plant this vine,  
Which might the more endear it to be thine.  
Spices come from the East ; so did thy Spouse,  
Trim as the light, sweet as the laden boughs  
Of Noah's shady vine, chaste as the dove,  
Prepared and fitted to receive thy love.  
The course was westward, that the sun might light  
As well our understanding as our sight.  
Where the Ark did rest, there Abraham began  
To bring the other Ark from Canaan.

Moses pursued this : but King Solomon  
Finish'd and fix'd the old religion.  
When it grew loose, the Jews did hope in vain  
By nailing Christ to fasten it again.  
But to the Gentiles he bore cross and all,  
Rending with earthquakes the partition-wall.  
Only whereas the Ark in glory shone,  
Now with the cross, as with a staff, alone,  
Religion, like a pilgrim, westward bent,  
Knocking at all doors, ever as she went.  
Yet as the sun, though forward be his flight,  
Listens behind him, and allows some light,  
Till all depart : so went the Church her way,  
Letting, while one foot stept, the other stay  
Among the eastern nations for a time,  
Till both removed to the western clime.  
To Egypt first she came, where they did prove  
Wonders of anger once, but now of love.  
The ten Commandments there did flourish more  
Than the ten bitter plagues had done before.  
Holy Macarius and great Anthony  
Made Pharaoh Moses, changing the history.  
Goshen was darkness, Egypt full of lights,  
Nilus for monsters brought forth Israelites.  
Such power hath mighty Baptism to produce,  
For things misshapen, things of highest use.

How dear to me, O God, thy counsels are !  
Who may with thee compare ?  
Religion thence fled into Greece, where arts  
Gave her the highest place in all men's hearts.  
Learning was posed, Philosophy was set,  
Sophisters taken in a fisher's net.  
Plato and Aristotle were at a loss,  
And wheel'd about again to spell Christ's-Cross,  
Prayers chased syllogisms into their den,  
And Ergo was transform'd into Amen.  
Though Greece took horse as soon as Egypt did,  
And Rome as both ; yet Egypt faster rid,  
And spent her period and prefixed time  
Before the other. Greece being past her prime,  
Religion went to Rome, subduing those,  
Who, that they might subdue, made all their foes.  
The Warrior his dear scars no more resounds,  
But seems to yield Christ hath the greater wounds ;  
Wounds willingly endured to work his bliss,  
Who by an ambush lost his Paradise.  
The great heart stoops, and taketh from the dust  
A sad repentance, not the spoils of lust :  
Quitting his spear lest it should pierce again  
Him in his members, who for him was slain.  
The shepherd's hook grew to a sceptre here,  
Giving new names and numbers to the year.

But the Empire dwelt in Greece, to comfort them,  
Who were cut short in Alexander's stem.  
In both of these Prowess and Arts did tame  
And tune men's hearts against the Gospel came :  
Which using, and not fearing skill in the one,  
Or strength in the other, did erect her throne,  
Many a rent and struggling the empire knew,  
(As dying things are wont,) until it flew  
At length to Germany, still westward bending,  
And there the Church's festival attending :  
That as before Empire and Arts made way,  
(For no less harbingers would serve than they)  
So they might still, and point us out the place,  
Where first the Church should raise her downcast face.  
Strength levels grounds, Art makes a garden there ;  
Then showers Religion, and makes all to bear.  
Spain in the Empire shared with Germany,  
But England in the higher victory ;  
Giving the Church a crown to keep her state,  
And not go less than she had done of late.  
Constantine's British line meant this of old,  
And did this mystery wrap up and fold  
Within a sheet of paper, which was rent  
From time's great Chronicle, and hither sent.  
Thus both the Church and Sun together ran  
Unto the farthest old meridian.

How dear to me, O God, thy counsels are !  
Who may with thee compare ?  
Much about one and the same time and place,  
Both where and when the Church began her race,  
Sin did set out of Eastern Babylon,  
And travell'd westward also : journeying on  
He chid the Church away, where'er he came,  
Breaking her peace, and tainting her good name.  
At first he got to Egypt, and did sow  
Gardens of gods, which every year did grow,  
Fresh and fine deities. They were at great cost,  
Who for a god clearly a sallet lost.  
Ah, what a thing is man devoid of grace,  
Adoring garlic with an humble face,  
Begging his food of that which he may eat,  
Starving the while he worshippeth his meat !  
Who makes a root his god, how low is he,  
If God and man be sever'd infinitely !  
What wretchedness can give him any room,  
Whose house is foul, while he adores his broom ?  
None will believe this now, though money be  
In us the same transplanted foolery.  
Thus Sin in Egypt sneaked for a while ;  
His highest was an ox or crocodile,  
And such poor game. Thence he to Greece doth pass,  
And being craftier much than Goodness was,

He left behind him garrisons of sins,  
To make good that which every day he wins.  
Here Sin took heart, and for a garden-bed  
Rich shrines and oracles he purchased :  
He grew a gallant, and would needs foretell  
As well what should befall, as what befell.  
Nay, he became a poet, and would serve  
His pills of sublimate in that conserve.  
The world came both with hands and purses full  
To this great lottery, and all would pull.  
But all was glorious cheating, brave deceit,  
Where some poor truths were shuffled for a bait  
To credit him, and to discredit those,  
Who after him should braver truths disclose.  
From Greece he went to Rome : and as before  
He was a God, now he's an Emperor.  
Nero and others lodged him bravely there,  
Put him in trust to rule the Roman sphere.  
Glory was his chief instrument of old :  
Pleasure succeeded straight, when that grew cold :  
Which soon was blown to such a mighty flame,  
That though our Saviour did destroy the game,  
Disparking oracles, and all their treasure,  
Setting affliction to encounter pleasure ;  
Yet did a rogue with hope of carnal joy,  
Cheat the most subtle nations. Who so coy,



So trim, as Greece and Egypt? yet their hearts  
Are given over, for their curious arts,  
To such Mahometan stupidities,  
As the old Heathen would deem prodigies.  
How dear to me, O God, thy counsels are!

Who may with thee compare?  
Only the West and Rome do keep them free  
From this contagious infidelity.  
And this is all the Rock, whereof they boast,  
As Rome will one day find unto her cost.  
Sin being not able to extirpate quite  
The Churches here, bravely resolved one night  
To be a Churchman too, and wear a Mitre:  
The old debauched ruffian would turn writer.  
I saw him in his study, where he sate  
Busy in controversies sprung of late.  
A gown and pen became him wondrous well:  
His grave aspect had more of heaven than hell:  
Only there was a handsome picture by,  
To which he lent a corner of his eye.  
As Sin in Greece a Prophet was before,  
And in old Rome a mighty Emperor;  
So now being Priest he plainly did profess  
To make a jest of Christ's three offices:  
The rather since his scatter'd jugglings were  
United now in one both time and sphere.

From Egypt he took petty deities,  
From Greece oracular infallibilities,  
And from old Rome the liberty of pleasure,  
By free dispensings of the Church's treasure.  
Then in memorial of his ancient throne,  
He did surname his palace, Babylon.  
Yet that he might the better gain all nations,  
And make that name good by their transmigrations ;  
From all these places, but at divers times,  
He took fine vizards to conceal his crimes :  
From Egypt Anchorism and retiredness,  
Learning from Greece, from old Rome stateliness ;  
And blending these, he carried all men's eyes,  
While Truth sat by, counting his victories :  
Whereby he grew apace and scorn'd to use  
Such force as once did captivate the Jews ;  
But did bewitch, and finally work each nation  
Into a voluntary transmigration.  
All post to Rome : Princes submit their necks  
Either to his public foot or private tricks.  
It did not fit his gravity to stir,  
Nor his long journey, nor his gout and fur :  
Therefore he sent out able ministers,  
Statesmen within, without doors cloisterers ;  
Who without spear, or sword, or other drum,  
Than what was in their tongue, did overcome ;

And having conquer'd, did so strangely rule,  
That the whole world did seem but the Pope's mule.  
As new and old Rome did one Empire twist ;  
So both together are one Antichrist ;  
Yet with two faces, as their Janus was,  
Being in this their old crack'd looking-glass.  
How dear to me, O God, thy counsels are !

Who may with thee compare ?

Thus Sin triumphs in Western Babylon ;  
Yet not as Sin, but as Religion.  
Of his two thrones he made the latter best,  
And to defray his journey from the East.  
Old and new Babylon are to hell and night,  
As is the moon and sun to heaven and light.  
When the one did set, the other did take place,  
Confronting equally the law and grace.  
They are hell's land-marks, Satan's double crest :  
They are Sin's nipples, feeding the east and west.  
But as in vice the copy still exceeds  
The pattern, but not so in virtuous deeds ;  
So though Sin made his latter seat the better,  
The latter Church is to the first a debtor.  
The second Temple could not reach the first :  
And the late reformation never durst  
Compare with ancient times and purer years ;  
But in the Jews and us deserveth tears.

Nay, it shall every year decrease and fade ;  
Till such a darkness do the world invade  
At Christ's last coming, as his first did find :  
Yet must there such proportions be assign'd  
To these diminishings, as is between  
The spacious world and Jewry to be seen.  
Religion stands on tiptoe in our land,  
Ready to pass to the American strand.  
When height of malice, and prodigious lusts,  
Impudent sinning, witchcrafts, and distrusts,  
(The marks of future bane,) shall fill our cup  
Unto the brim, and make our measure up ;  
When Seine shall swallow Tiber, and the Thames  
By letting in them both, pollutes her streams :  
When Italy of us shall have her will,  
And all her calendar of sins fulfil ;  
Whereby one may foretell, what sins next year  
Shall both in France and England domineer :  
Then shall Religion to America flee :  
They have their times of Gospel, e'en as we,  
My God, thou dost prepare for them a way,  
By carrying first their gold from them away :  
For gold and grace did never yet agree ;  
Religion always sides with poverty.  
We think we rob them, but we think amiss :  
We are more poor, and they more rich by this.

Thou wilt revenge their quarrel, making grace  
To pay our debts, and leave our ancient place  
To go to them, while that, which now their nation  
But lends to us, shall be our desolation.  
Yet as the Church shall hither westward fly,  
So sin shall trace and dog her instantly :  
They have their period also and set times  
Both for their virtuous actions and their crimes.  
And where of old the Empire and the Arts  
Usher'd the Gospel ever in men's hearts,  
Spain hath done one ; when Arts perform the other,  
The Church shall come, and sin the Church shall smother  
That when they have accomplished the round, [ther:  
And met in the East their first and ancient sound,  
Judgment may meet them both, and search them round.  
Thus do both lights, as well in Church as Sun,  
Light one another, and together run.  
Thus also Sin and Darkness follow still  
The Church and Sun with all their power and skill.  
But as the Sun still goes both west and east :  
So also did the Church by going west  
Still eastward go ; because it drew more near  
To time and place, where judgment shall appear.  
How dear to me, O God, thy counsels are !  
Who may with thee compare ?

## L'ENVOY.

KING of glory, King of peace,  
With the one make war to cease;  
With the other bless thy sheep,  
Thee to love, in thee to sleep.  
Let not sin devour thy fold,  
Bragging that thy blood is cold;  
That thy death is also dead,  
While his conquests daily spread;  
That thy flesh hath lost his food,  
And thy Cross is common wood.  
Choke him, let him say no more,  
But reserve his breath in store,  
Till thy conquest and his fall  
Make his sighs to use it all;  
And then bargain with the wind  
To discharge what is behind.

BLESSED BE GOD ALONE,  
THRICE BLESSED THREE IN ONE.

## MISCELLANEOUS POEMS.

---

### A Sonnet

SENT BY GEORGE HERBERT TO HIS MOTHER AS  
A NEW YEAR'S GIFT FROM CAMBRIDGE.

My God, where is that ancient heat towards thee,  
Wherewith whole shoals of Martyrs once did burn,  
Besides their other flames? Doth poetry  
Wear Venus' livery? only serve her turn?  
Why are not sonnets made of thee? and layes  
Upon thine altar burnt? Cannot thy love  
Heighten a spirit to sound out thy praise  
As well as any she? Cannot thy Dove  
Outstrip their Cupid easily in flight?  
Or, since thy ways are deep, and still the same,  
Will not a verse run smooth that bears thy name!  
Why doth that fire, which by thy power and might  
Each breast does feel, no braver fuel choose [fuse.  
Than that, which one day, worms may chance re-

Sure, Lord, there is enough in thee to dry  
 Oceans of ink ; for, as the Deluge did  
 Cover the Earth, so doth thy Majesty :  
 Each cloud distils thy praise, and doth forbid  
 Poets to turn it to another use.  
 Roses and lilies speak thee ; and to make  
 A pair of cheeks of them, is thy abuse.  
 Why should I women's eyes for crystal take ?  
 Such poor invention burns in their low mind  
 Whose fire is wild, and doth not upward go  
 To praise, and on thee, Lord, some ink bestow.  
 Open the bones, and you shall nothing find  
 In the best face but filth ; when, Lord, in thee  
 The beauty lies, in the discovery.

### Inscription

IN THE PARSONAGE, BEMERTON.  
 TO MY SUCCESSOR.

IF thou chance for to find  
 A new house to thy mind  
 And built without thy cost :  
 Be good to the poor,  
 As God gives thee store,  
 And then my labour's not lost.



## On Lord Danvers.

SACRED marble, safely keep  
 His dust, who under thee must sleep,  
 Until the years again restore  
 Their dead, and time shall be no more.  
 Meanwhile, if he, (which all things wears)  
 Does ruin thee, or if thy tears  
 Are shed for him ; dissolve thy frame,  
 Thou art requited : for his fame,  
 His virtue, and his worth shall be  
 Another monument to thee.

## A Paradox.

*(From a MS. Collection formerly Dr. Rawlinson's,  
 in the Bodleian Library, Oxford.)*

THAT THE SICK ARE IN A BETTER CASE, THEN  
 THE WHOLE.

You who admire yourselves because  
 You neither groan nor weep,  
 And think it contrary to Nature's laws  
 To want one ounce of sleep,  
 Your strong belief  
 Acquits yourselves, and gives the sick all grief.

Your state to ours is contrary,  
That makes you think us poor,  
So Black-moors think us foul, and we  
Are quit with them, and more,  
Nothing can see,  
And judge of things but mediocrity.

The sick are in themselves a state  
Which health hath nought to do.  
How know you that our tears proceed from woe,  
And not from better fate?  
Since that mirth hath  
Her waters also and desired bath.

How know you that the sighs we send  
From want of breath proceed,  
Not from excess? and therefore we do spend  
That which we do not need;  
So trembling may  
As well show inward warbling, as decay.

Cease then to judge calamities  
By outward form and show,  
But view yourselves, and inward turn your eyes,  
Then you shall fully know  
That your estate  
Is, of the two, the far more desperate.

You always fear to feel those smarts  
Which we but sometimes prove,  
Each little comfort much affects our hearts,  
None but gross joys you move :  
Why then confess  
Your fears in number more, your joys are less.

Then for yourselves not us embrace  
Plaints to bad fortune due,  
For though you visit us, and plaint or case,  
We doubt much whether you  
Come to our bed  
To comfort us, or to be comforted.

THE END.



LONDON :  
GILBERT AND RIVINGTON, PRINTERS, ST. JOHN'S SQUARE.

A  
PRIEST TO THE TEMPLE;  
OR,  
THE COUNTRY PARSON.



## CONTENTS.

---

	PAGE
Memoir of the Author.—From Izaak Walton . . . . .	v
The Author to the Reader . . . . .	xi
Chap. I. Of a Pastor . . . . .	1
II. Their Diversities . . . . .	2
III. The Parson's Life . . . . .	5
IV. The Parson's Knowledge . . . . .	7
V. The Parson's accessory Knowledges . . . . .	10
VI. The Parson Praying . . . . .	12
VII. The Parson Preaching . . . . .	15
VIII. The Parson on Sundays . . . . .	21
IX. The Parson's State of Life . . . . .	24
X. The Parson in his House . . . . .	28
XI. The Parson's Courtesy . . . . .	36
XII. The Parson's Charity . . . . .	38
XIII. The Parson's Church . . . . .	42
XIV. The Parson in Circuit . . . . .	44
XV. The Parson Comforting . . . . .	48
XVI. The Parson a Father . . . . .	50
XVII. The Parson in Journey . . . . .	51
XVIII. The Parson in Sentinel . . . . .	53
XIX. The Parson in Reference . . . . .	54

	PAGE
Chap. XX. The Parson in God's Stead . . . . .	57
XXI. The Parson Catechising . . . . .	59
XXII. The Parson in Sacraments . . . . .	64
XXIII. The Parson's Completeness . . . . .	68
XXIV. The Parson Arguing . . . . .	73
XXV. The Parson Punishing . . . . .	75
XXVI. The Parson's Eye . . . . .	76
XXVII. The Parson in Mirth . . . . .	83
XXVIII. The Parson in Contempt . . . . .	84
XXIX. The Parson with his Churchwardens . . . . .	87
XXX. The Parson's Consideration of Providence . . . . .	89
XXXI. The Parson in Liberty . . . . .	92
XXXII. The Parson's Surveys . . . . .	95
XXXIII. The Parson's Library . . . . .	103
XXXIV. The Parson's Dexterity in applying Remedies . . . . .	107
XXXV. The Parson's Condescending . . . . .	114
XXXVI. The Parson Blessing . . . . .	116
XXXVII. Concerning Detraction . . . . .	120
The Author's Prayer before Sermon . . . . .	123
A Prayer after Sermon . . . . .	126

## MEMOIR OF THE AUTHOR

[ABRIDGED FROM IZAAK WALTON].

---

GEORGE HERBERT was born in April, 1593. The place of his birth was near Montgomery, in the castle that had been successively happy in the family of the Herberts, who had long possessed it and a plentiful estate: a family that hath been blest with men of remarkable wisdom.

George Herbert, who was the fifth of seven sons, spent much of his childhood under the eye and care of his prudent mother, and the tuition of a chaplain in her own family (for she was then a widow), where he continued till about the age of twelve years; and being at that time well instructed in the rules of grammar, he was not long after commended to the care of Dr. Neale, who was then Dean of Westminster. At Westminster School he continued till he became perfect in the learned languages, and especially in the Greek tongue, in which he after proved an excellent critic.



About the age of fifteen (he being then a king's scholar), he was elected out of that school for Trinity College, Cambridge, to which place he removed about the year 1608. Here his mother placed him under the care of the generous and liberal Dr. Nevil, who was then Dean of Canterbury, and master of that college.

He was made Bachelor of Arts in the year 1611; Major Fellow of the College, 1615: and in that year he was also made Master of Arts, he being then in the twenty-second year of his age; and in the year 1619 he was chosen Orator for the University. In the place of orator he continued eight years.

About this time the king frequently came to the University, and was usually welcomed with the applauses and gratulations of the Public Orator, who acquitted himself so well that he was taken into notice, and received some marks of royal approbation. In one of these visits to Cambridge, his Majesty was attended, by the great secretary of nature and all learning, Sir Francis Bacon (Lord Verulam), and by the ever memorable and learned Dr. Andrews, Bishop of Winchester, both which

did at that time begin a desired friendship with Mr. Herbert. Upon whom, the first put such a value on his judgment, that he usually desired his approbation before he would expose any of his books to be printed; and thought him so worthy of his friendship, that having translated many of the Prophet David's Psalms into English verse, he made George Herbert his patron, by a public dedication of them to him, as the best judge of divine poetry.

At the time of being Orator, he had learned the Italian, Spanish, and French tongues very perfectly; hoping he might in time attain the place of a secretary of state, he being at that time very high in the king's favour, and not meanly valued and loved by the most eminent and most powerful of the court nobility. This, and the love of a court-conversation, mixed with a laudable ambition to be something more than he then was, drew him often from Cambridge, to attend the king wheresoever the court was.

He had often designed to leave the University, and decline all study, which he thought impaired his health; but his mother would by no means

allow him to leave the University, or to travel; and though he inclined very much to both, yet he would by no means satisfy his own desires at so dear a rate, as to prove an undutiful son to so affectionate a mother; but always submitted to her wisdom.

In this time of Mr. Herbert's attendance and expectation of some good occasion to remove from Cambridge to court, God, in whom there is an unseen chain of causes, did in a short time put an end to the lives of two of his most obliging and powerful friends, Lodowick, Duke of Richmond, and James, Marquis of Hamilton; and not long after him, King James died also, and with them all Mr. Herbert's court hopes; so that he presently betook himself to a retreat from London. In this time of retirement, he had many conflicts with himself, whether he should return to the painted pleasures of a court life, or betake himself to the study of divinity, and enter into sacred orders.

At his return to London, he acquainted a court friend with his resolution to enter into sacred orders, who persuaded him to alter it, as too mean an employment, and too much below his birth, and

the excellent abilities and endowments of his mind. To whom he replied,—“It hath been formerly judged that the domestic servants of the King of heaven should be of the noblest families on earth. And though the iniquity of the late times have made clergymen meanly valued, and the sacred name of priest contemptible; yet I will labour to make it honourable, by consecrating all my learning, and all my poor abilities, to advance the glory of that God that gave them; knowing that I can never do too much for him, that hath done so much for me, as to make me a Christian. And I will labour to be like my Saviour, by making humility lovely in the eyes of all men, and by following the merciful and meek example of my dear Jesus.”

Within a year from this time he was made a deacon; and in July, 1626, prebend of Layton Ecclesia, in the diocese of Lincoln; soon after which he married Jane, daughter of Mr. Charles Danvers, of Bainton, in the county of Wilts.

In 1630, Mr. Herbert was inducted into the good, and more pleasant than healthful parsonage of Bemerton, a mile from Salisbury; the third day after which he said to his wife, “You are now a

minister's wife, and must now so far forget your father's house, as not to claim a precedence of any of your parishioners; for you are to know that a priest's wife can challenge no precedence or place, but that which she purchases by her obliging humility; and I am sure, places so purchased do best become them. And let me tell you, that I am so good a herald, as to assure you that this is truth." And she was so meek a wife, as to assure him, it was no vexing news to her, and that he should see her observe it with a cheerful willingness.

That Mr. Herbert might the better preserve these holy rules which such a priest, as he intended to be, ought to observe; and that time might not insensibly blot them out of his memory, but that the next year might show him his variations from this year's resolutions; he, therefore, did set down his rules, then resolved upon, in that order as the world now sees them printed in a little book, called *The Country Parson*; and his behaviour towards God and man may be said to be a practical comment on these, and the other holy rules set down in that useful book.

## THE AUTHOR TO THE READER.

---

BEING desirous, through the mercy of God, to please him, for whom I am and live, and who giveth me my desires and performances; and considering with myself, that the way to please him is to feed my flock diligently and faithfully, since our Saviour hath made that the argument of a Pastor's love; I have resolved to set down the form and character of a true Pastor, that I may have a mark to aim at: which, also, I will set as high as I can, since he shoots higher that threatens the moon, than he that aims at a tree. Not that I think, if a man do not all which is here expressed, he presently sins, and displeases God; but that it is a good strife to go as far as we can in pleasing of Him, who hath done so much for us. The Lord prosper the intention to myself, and others who may not despise my poor labours, but add to those points which I have observed, until the book grow to a complete pastoral.

1632.

GEORGE HERBERT.



A

Priest to the Temple ;

OR,

THE COUNTRY PARSON.

---

CHAP. I.

OF A PASTOR.

A PASTOR is the deputy of Christ for the reducing of man to the obedience of God. This definition is evident, and contains the direct steps of pastoral duty and authority. For, first, man fell from God by disobedience. Secondly, Christ is the glorious instrument of God for the revoking of man. Thirdly, Christ, being not to continue on earth, but, after he had fulfilled the work of reconciliation, to be received up into heaven, he constituted deputies in his place ; and these are priests. And therefore

B



St. Paul, in the beginning of his Epistles, professeth this : and, in the first to the Colossians, plainly avoucheth, that he *fills up that which is behind of the afflictions of Christ in his flesh, for his body's sake, which is the church.* Wherein is contained the complete definition of a Minister.

Out of this charter of the priesthood may be plainly gathered both the dignity thereof and the duty. The dignity, in that a Priest *may do* that which Christ did, and by his authority, and as his vicegerent. The duty, in that a Priest *is to do* that which Christ did, and after his manner, both for doctrine and life.

---

## CHAP. II.

### THEIR DIVERSITIES.

OF Pastors (intending my own nation only ; and also therein setting aside the Reverend Prelates of the church, to whom this discourse ariseth not) some live in the Universities ; some in noble houses ; some in parishes, residing on their cures.

Of those that live in the Universities, some live

there in office, whose rule is that of the apostle<sup>1</sup>: *Having gifts, differing according to the grace that is given to us, whether prophecy, let us prophesy according to the proportion of faith; or ministry, let us wait on our ministering: or he that teacheth, on teaching, &c.; he that ruleth, let him do it with diligence, &c.* Some in a preparatory way; whose aim and labour must be, not only to get knowledge, but to subdue and mortify all lusts and affections; and not to think that, when they have read the fathers or schoolmen, a minister is made, and the thing done. The greatest and hardest preparation is within. For, *unto the ungodly, saith God, why dost thou preach my laws, and takest my covenant in thy mouth<sup>2</sup>?*

Those that live in noble houses are called chaplains, whose duty and obligation being the same to the houses they live in, as a Parson's to his parish, in describing the one (which is indeed the bent of my discourse) the other will be manifest. Let not chaplains think themselves so free as many of them do; and, because they have different names, think their office different. Doubtless they are Parsons

<sup>1</sup> Rom. xii. 6-8.

<sup>2</sup> Ps. l. 16.

of the families they live in, and are entertained to that end, either by an open or implicit covenant. Before they are in orders, they may be received for companions or discoursers ; but, after a man is once Minister, he cannot agree to come into any house where he shall not exercise what he is, unless he forsake his plough and look back. Wherefore they are not to be over-submissive and base, but to keep up with the lord and lady of the house, and to preserve a boldness with them and all, even so far as reproof to their very face, when occasion calls ; but seasonably and discreetly. They who do not thus, while they remember their earthly lord, do much forget their heavenly ; they wrong the priesthood, neglect their duty, and shall be so far from that which they seek with their over-submissiveness and cringings, that they shall ever be despised. They who, for the hope of promotion, neglect any necessary admonition or reproof, sell (with Judas) their Lord and Master.

## CHAP. III.

## THE PARSON'S LIFE.

THE Country Parson is exceeding exact in his life ; being holy, just, prudent, temperate, bold, grave, in all his ways. And because the two highest points of life, wherein a Christian is most seen, are patience and mortification ; patience in regard of afflictions, mortification in regard of lusts and affections, and the stupifying and deadening of all the clamorous powers of the soul ; therefore he hath thoroughly studied these, that he may be an absolute master and commander of himself, for all the purposes for which God hath ordained him.

Yet, in these points, he labours most in those things which are most apt to scandalize his parish. —And first, because country people live hardly, and therefore (as feeling their own sweat, and consequently knowing the price of money) are offended much with any who, by hard usage, increase their travail, the Country Parson is very circumspect in avoiding all covetousness ; neither being greedy to

get, nor niggardly to keep, nor troubled to lose, any worldly wealth; but, in all his words and actions, slighting and disesteeming it; even to a wondering that the world should so much value wealth, which in the day of wrath hath not one drachm of comfort for us.—Secondly, because luxury is a very visible sin, the Parson is very careful to avoid all the kinds thereof: but especially that of drinking, because it is the most popular vice; into which, if he come, he prostitutes himself both to shame and sin, and by having *fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness*, he disableth himself of authority to reprove them. For sins make all equal whom they find together; and then *they* are worst, who ought to be best. Neither is it for the servant of Christ to haunt inns, or taverns, or alehouses, to the dishonour of his person and office. The Parson doth not so, but orders his life in such a fashion, that, when death takes him, as the Jews and Judas did Christ, he may say as *he* did, *I sat daily with you teaching in the temple.*—Thirdly, because country people (as indeed all honest men) do much esteem their word, it being the life of buying and selling and dealing in the world, there-

fore the Parson is very strict in keeping his word, though it be to his own hindrance; as knowing that, if he be not so, he will quickly be discovered and disrespected; neither will they believe him in the pulpit, whom they cannot trust in his conversation.—As for oaths, and apparel, the disorders thereof are also very manifest. The Parson's yea is yea, and nay, nay: and his apparel plain, but reverend, and clean, without spots, or dust, or smell: the purity of his mind breaking out, and dilating itself even to his body, clothes, and habitation.

---

#### CHAP. IV.

##### THE PARSON'S KNOWLEDGE.

THE Country Parson is full of all knowledge. They say, it is an ill mason that refuseth any stone: and there is no knowledge, but, in a skilful hand, serves either positively as it is, or else to illustrate some other knowledge. He condescends even to the knowledge of tillage and pasturage, and makes great use of them in teaching; because

people by what they understand, are best led to what they understand not.

But the chief and top of his knowledge consists in the book of books, the storehouse and magazine of life and comfort, THE HOLY SCRIPTURES. There he sucks, and lives. In the Scriptures he finds four things; precepts for life, doctrines for knowledge, examples for illustration, and promises for comfort. These he hath digested severally.

But, for the understanding of these, the means he useth are—First, A HOLY LIFE; remembering what his Master saith, that *if any do God's will, he shall know of the doctrine*<sup>1</sup>; and assuring himself, that wicked men, however learned, do not know the Scriptures, because they feel them not, and because they are not understood but with the same Spirit that writ them.—The second means is PRAYER, which, if it be necessary even in temporal things, how much more in things of another world, where *the well is deep, and we have nothing of ourselves to draw with?* Wherefore he ever begins the reading of the Scripture with some short ejaculation; as, *Lord, open mine eyes, that I may*

<sup>1</sup> John vii. 17.

*see the wondrous things of thy law.*—The third means is a DILIGENT COLLATION of Scripture with Scripture. For, all truth being consonant to itself, and all being penned by one and the self-same Spirit, it cannot be, but that an industrious and judicious comparing of place with place must be a singular help for the right understanding of the Scriptures. To this may be added, the consideration of any text with the coherence thereof, touching what goes before, and what follows after; as also the scope of the Holy Ghost. When the apostles would have called down fire from heaven, they were reprov'd as ignorant of what spirit they were. For the law required one thing, and the gospel another; yet as diverse, not as repugnant; therefore the spirit of both is to be considered and weigh'd.—The fourth means are COMMENTERS AND FATHERS, who have handled the places controverted; which the Parson by no means refuseth. As he doth not so study others, as to neglect the grace of God in himself, and what the Holy Spirit teacheth him; so doth he assure himself, that God in all ages hath had his servants, to whom he hath revealed his truth, as well as to him: and that as



one country doth not bear all things, that there may be a commerce ; so neither hath God opened or will open, all to one, that there may be a traffic in knowledge between the servants of God, for the planting both of love and humility. Wherefore he hath one comment, at least, upon every book of Scripture ; and, ploughing with this, and his own meditations, he enters into the secrets of God treasured in the Holy Scripture.

---

## CHAP. V.

### THE PARSON'S ACCESSORY KNOWLEDGES.

THE Country Parson hath read the fathers also, and the schoolmen, and the later writers, or a good proportion of all : out of all which he hath compiled a book, and body of divinity, which is the storehouse of his sermons, and which he preacheth all his life, but diversely clothed, illustrated, and enlarged. For though the world is full of such composures, yet every man's own is fittest, readiest, and most savoury to him. Besides, this being to

be done in his younger and preparatory times, it is an honest joy ever after to look upon his well-spent hours.

This body he made, by way of expounding the church catechism ; to which all divinity may easily be reduced. For, it being indifferent in itself to choose any method, that is best to be chosen of which there is likeliest to be most use. Now catechising being a work of singular and admirable benefit to the church of God, and a thing required under canonical obedience, the expounding of our catechism must needs be the most useful form. Yet hath the Parson, besides this laborious work, a slighter form of catechising, fitter for country people ; according as his audience is, so he useth one, or other ; or sometimes both, if his audience be intermixed.

He greatly esteems also of cases of conscience ; wherein he is much versed. And indeed, herein is the greatest ability of a Parson ; to lead his people exactly in the ways of truth, so that they neither decline to the right hand, nor to the left. Neither let any think this a slight thing. For every one hath not digested, when it is a sin to

take something for money lent, or when not; when it is a fault to discover another's fault, or when not; when the affections of the soul in desiring and procuring increase of means, or honour, be a sin of covetousness or ambition, and when not; when the appetites of the body in eating, drinking, sleep, and the pleasure that comes with sleep, be sins of gluttony, drunkenness, sloth, lust, and when not; and so in many circumstances of actions. Now, if a shepherd know not which grass will bane, or which not, how is he fit to be a shepherd? Wherefore the Parson hath thoroughly canvassed all the particulars of human actions; at least, all those which he observeth are most incident to his parish.

---

## CHAP. VI.

### THE PARSON PRAYING.

THE Country Parson, when he is to read divine services, composeth himself to all possible reverence; lifting up his heart, and hands, and eyes, and using all other gestures which may express a hearty and

unfeigned devotion. This he doth—First, as being truly touched and amazed with the Majesty of God, before whom he then presents himself : yet not as himself alone, but as presenting with himself the whole congregation ; whose sins he then bears, and brings with his own to the heavenly altar, to be bathed and washed in the sacred laver of Christ's blood. Secondly, as this is the true reason of his inward fear, so he is content to express this outwardly to the utmost of his power ; that, being first affected himself, he may affect also his people ; knowing that no sermon moves them so much to reverence (which they forget again when they come to pray) as a devout behaviour in the very act of praying. Accordingly his voice is humble, his words treatable and slow ; yet not so slow neither as to let the fervency of the suppliant hang and die between speaking ; but, with a grave liveliness, between fear and zeal, pausing yet pressing, he performs his duty.

Besides his example, he, having often instructed his people how to carry themselves in divine service, exacts of them all possible reverence ; by no means enduring either talking, or sleeping, or gazing, or

leaning, or half-kneeling, or any undutiful behaviour in them ; but causing them, when they sit, or stand, or kneel, to do all in a straight and steady posture, as attending to what is done in the church, and every one, man and child, answering aloud, both Amen, and all other answers which are on the clerk's and people's part to answer. Which answers also are to be done, not in a huddling or slubbering fashion—gaping, or scratching the head, or spitting, even in the midst of their answer—but gently and pausably, thinking what they say ; so that while they answer, “ As it was in the beginning,” &c., they meditate as they speak, that God hath ever had his people that have glorified him, as well as now, and that he shall have so for ever. And the like in other answers. This is that which the apostle calls a *reasonable service*<sup>1</sup>, when we speak not as parrots, without reason, or offer up such sacrifices as they did of old, which was of beasts devoid of reason : but when we use our reason, and apply our powers to the service of him that gives them.

If there be any of the gentry or nobility of the

<sup>1</sup> Rom. xii. 1.

parish, who sometimes make it a piece of state not to come at the beginning of service with their poor neighbours, but at mid-prayers, both to their own loss, and of theirs also who gaze upon them when they come in, and neglect the present service of God ; he by no means suffers it, but after divers gentle admonitions, if they persevere, he causes them to be presented. Or, if the poor church-wardens be affrighted with their greatness (notwithstanding his instruction that they ought not to be so, but even to let the world sink, so they do their duty), he presents them himself ; only protesting to them, that not any ill-will draws him to it, but the debt and obligation of his calling, being to obey God rather than men.

---

## CHAP. VII.

### THE PARSON PREACHING.

THE Country Parson preacheth constantly. The pulpit is his joy and his throne. If he at any time intermit, it is either for want of health, or against some great festival, that he may the better celebrate

it ; or for the variety of hearers, that he may be heard at his return more attentively. When he intermits, he is ever very well supplied by some able man, who treads in his steps, and will not throw down what he hath built ; whom also he entreats to press some point that he himself hath often urged with no great success, that so *in the mouth of two or three witnesses the truth may be more established.*

When he preacheth, he procures attention by all possible art : both by earnestness of speech—it being natural to men to think, that where is much earnestness, there is somewhat worth hearing—and by a diligent and busy cast of his eyes on his auditors, with letting them know that he marks who observes, and who not : and with particularizing of his speech now to the younger sort, then to the elder, now to the poor, and now to the rich—“ This is for you, and this is for you ;”—for particulars ever touch and awake, more than generals. Herein also he serves himself of the judgments of God : as of those of ancient times, so especially of the late ones ; and those most, which are nearest to his parish ; for people are very attentive at such

discourses, and think it behoves them to be so, when God is so near them, and even over their heads. Sometimes he tells them stories and sayings of others, according as his text invites him: for them also men heed, and remember better than exhortations; which, though earnest, yet often die with the sermon, especially with country people, which are thick, and heavy, and hard to raise to a point of zeal and fervency, and need a mountain of fire to kindle them; but stories and sayings they will well remember. He often tells them, that sermons are dangerous things; that none goes out of church as he came in, but either better or worse; that none is careless before his judge; and that the word of God shall judge us.

By these and other means the Parson procures attention: but the character of his sermon is HOLINESS. He is not witty, nor learned, nor eloquent, but HOLY:—a character that Hermogenes never dreamed of, and therefore he could give no precepts thereof. But it is gained, First, by choosing texts of devotion, not controversy; moving and ravishing texts, whereof the Scriptures are full.—Secondly, by dipping and seasoning all our words and sen-



tences in our hearts, before they come into our mouths ; truly affecting, and cordially expressing all that we say, so that the auditors may plainly perceive that every word is heart-deep.—Thirdly, by turning often, and making many apostrophes to God : as, “ O Lord ! bless my people, and teach them this point ! ” or, “ O my Master, on whose errand I come, let me hold my peace, and do thou speak thyself ; for thou art love ; and when thou teachest, all are scholars.” Some such irradiations scatteringly in the sermon, carry great holiness in them. The prophets are admirable in this. So Isaiah, lxiv. *Oh that thou wouldst rend the heavens, that thou wouldst come down, &c.* And Jeremy, x. after he had complained of the desolation of Israel, turns to God suddenly, *O Lord, I know that the way of man is not in himself, &c.*—Fourthly, by frequent wishes of the people's good, and joying therein ; though he himself were with St. Paul *even sacrificed upon the service of their faith.* For there is no greater sign of holiness, than the procuring and rejoicing in another's good. And herein St. Paul excelled in all his epistles. How did he put the Romans *in all*

*his prayers*<sup>1</sup>. And *ceased not to give thanks* for the Ephesians<sup>2</sup>, and for the Corinthians<sup>3</sup>. And for the Philippians *made request with joy*<sup>4</sup>; and is in contention for them whether to live or die, be with them or Christ<sup>5</sup>; which, setting aside his care of his flock, were a madness to doubt of. What an admirable epistle is the second to the Corinthians! How full of affections! He joys, and he is sorry; he grieves, and he glories! Never was there such a care of a flock expressed, save in the great Shepherd of the fold, who first shed tears over Jerusalem, and afterward blood. Therefore this care may be learned there, and then woven into sermons: which will make them appear exceeding reverend and holy.—Lastly, by an often urging of the presence and majesty of God; by these or such like speeches:—“Oh, let us take heed what we do! God sees us; he sees whether I speak as I ought, or you hear as you ought; he sees hearts, as we see faces. He is among us; for if we be here, he must be here; since we are here by him, and without him could not be here.” Then turning the dis-

<sup>1</sup> Rom. i. 9.<sup>2</sup> Eph. i. 16.<sup>3</sup> 1 Cor. i. 4.<sup>4</sup> Phil. i. 4.<sup>5</sup> Phil. i. 23.

course to his majesty :—“ And he is a great God, and terrible ; as great in mercy, so great in judgment ! There are but two devouring elements, fire and water ; he hath both in him. *His voice is as the sound of many waters*<sup>1.</sup> And he himself is *a consuming fire*<sup>2.</sup>—Such discourses show very holy.

The Parson's method in handling of a text consists of two parts :—first, a plain and evident declaration of the meaning of the text ; and, secondly, some choice observations, drawn out of the whole text, as it lies entire and unbroken in the Scripture itself. This he thinks natural, and sweet, and grave. Whereas the other way, of crumbling a text into small parts (as, the person speaking, or spoken to, the subject, and object, and the like), hath neither in it sweetness, nor gravity, nor variety ; since the words apart are not Scripture, but a dictionary, and may be considered alike in all the Scripture.

The Parson exceeds not an hour in preaching, because all ages have thought that a competency : and he that profits not in that time, will less after-

<sup>1</sup> Rev. i. 15.

<sup>2</sup> Heb. xii. 9.

ward : the same affection which made him not profit before, making him then weary ; and so he grows from not relishing to loathing.

---

## CHAP. VIII.

### THE PARSON ON SUNDAYS.

THE Country Parson, as soon as he awakes, on Sunday morning, presently falls to work, and seems to himself so as a market-man is, when the market-day comes ; or a shop-keeper, when customers use to come in. His thoughts are full of making the best of the day, and contriving it to his best gains. To this end, besides his ordinary prayers, he makes a peculiar one for a blessing on the exercises of the day ; “ that nothing befall him unworthy of that majesty before which he is to present himself, but that all may be done with reverence to his glory, and with edification to his flock ; humbly beseeching his Master, that how or whenever he punish him, it be not in his ministry.” Then he turns to request for his people, “ that the Lord would be pleased to sanctify them all ; that they may come

with holy hearts, and awful minds, into the congregation ; and that the good God would pardon all those who come with less prepared hearts than they ought."

This done, he sets himself to the consideration of the duties of the day ; and if there be any extraordinary addition to the customary exercises, either from the time of the year, or from the state, or from God by a child born, or dead, or any other accident, he contrives how and in what manner to induce it to the best advantage. Afterwards, when the hour calls, with his family attending him, he goes to church ; at his first entrance humbly adoring and worshipping the invisible majesty and presence of Almighty God, and blessing the people, either openly or to himself. Then, having read divine service twice fully, and preached in the morning, and catechised in the afternoon, he thinks he hath in some measure, according to poor and frail man, discharged the public duties of the congregation. The rest of the day he spends either in reconciling neighbours that are at variance ; or in visiting the sick ; or in exhortations to some of his flock by themselves, whom his sermons cannot, or

do not, reach. And every one is more awaked, when we come and say, *Thou art the man.* This way he finds exceeding useful, and winning: and these exhortations he calls his privy purse; even as princes have theirs, besides their public disbursements. At night he thinks it a very fit time, both suitable to the joy of the day, and without hindrance to public duties, either to entertain some of his neighbours, or to be entertained of them: where he takes occasion to discourse of such things as are both profitable and pleasant, and to raise up their minds to apprehend God's good blessing to our church and state; that order is kept in the one, and peace in the other, without disturbance or interruption of public divine offices.

As he opened the day with prayer, so he closeth it: humbly beseeching the Almighty "to pardon and accept our poor services, and to improve them, that we may grow therein; and that our feet may be like hind's feet, ever climbing up higher and higher unto him."

## CHAP. IX.

## THE PARSON'S STATE OF LIFE.

THE Country Parson, considering that virginity is a higher state than matrimony, and that the Ministry requires the best and highest things, is rather unmarried than married. But yet, as the temper of his body may be, or as the temper of his parish may be, where he may have occasion to converse with women, and that among suspicious men, and other like circumstances considered, he is rather married than unmarried. Let him communicate the thing often by prayer unto God ; and as his grace shall direct him, so let him proceed.

If he be unmarried, and keep house, he hath not a woman in his house ; but finds opportunities of having his meat dressed and other services done by men-servants at home, and his linen washed abroad. If he be unmarried, and sojourn, he never talks with any woman alone, but in the audience of others, and that seldom ; and then also in a serious manner, never jestingly or sportfully. He is very circumspect in all companies, both of his behaviour,

speech, and very looks; knowing himself to be both suspected and envied. If he *stand steadfast in his heart, having no necessity, but hath power over his own will, and hath so decreed in his heart, that he will keep himself a virgin*, he spends his days in fasting and prayer, and blesseth God for the gift of continency; knowing that it can no way be preserved, but only by those means by which at first it was obtained. He therefore thinks it not enough for him to observe the fasting days of the church, and the daily prayers enjoined him by authority, which he observeth out of humble conformity and obedience; but adds to them, out of choice and devotion, some other days for fasting, and hours for prayers. And by these he keeps his body tame, serviceable, and healthful; and his soul fervent, active, young, and lusty as an eagle. He often readeth the lives of the primitive monks, hermits, and virgins; and wondereth not so much at their patient suffering, and cheerful dying, under persecuting emperors (though that indeed be very admirable), as at their daily temperance, abstinence, watchings, and constant prayers and mortifications, in times of peace and prosperity. To put on the



profound humility and the exact temperance of our Lord Jesus, with other exemplary virtues of that sort, and to keep them on in the sunshine and noon of prosperity, he findeth to be as necessary and as difficult, at least, as to be clothed with perfect patience and Christian fortitude in the cold midnight storms of persecution and adversity. He keepeth his watch and ward, night and day, against the proper and peculiar temptations of his state of life ; which are principally these two, spiritual pride, and impurity of heart. Against these ghostly enemies he girdeth up his loins, keeps the imagination from roving, puts on the whole armour of God ; and by the virtue of the shield of faith, he is *not afraid of the pestilence that walketh in darkness* (carnal impurity), *nor of the sickness that destroyeth at noon-day* (ghostly pride and self-conceit). Other temptations he hath, which, like mortal enemies, may sometimes disquiet him likewise ; for the human soul, being bounded and kept in in her sensitive faculty, will run out more or less in her intellectual. Original concupiscence is such an active thing, by reason of continual inward or outward temptations, that it is ever attempting

or doing one mischief or other. Ambition, or untimely desire of promotion to a higher state or place, under colour of accommodation, or necessary provision, is a common temptation to men of any eminency, especially being single men. Curiosity in prying into high, speculative, and unprofitable questions, is another great stumbling-block to the holiness of scholars. These, and many other *spiritual wickednesses in high places* doth the Parson fear, or experiment, or both : and that much more being single than if he were married, for then commonly the stream of temptations is turned another way, into covetousness, love of pleasure or ease, or the like.—If the Parson be unmarried, and mean to continue so, he doth at least as much as hath been said.

If he be married, the choice of his wife was made rather by his ear, than by his eye ; his judgment, not his affection, found out a fit wife for him, whose humble and liberal disposition he preferred before beauty, riches, or honour. He knew that (the good instrument of God to bring woman to heaven) a wise and loving husband could, out of humility, produce any special grace of faith, patience, meek-

ness, love, obedience, &c., and out of liberality, make her fruitful in all good works. As he is just in all things, so is he to his wife also; counting nothing so much his own, as that he may be unjust unto it. Therefore he gives her respect both afore her servants and others, and half at least of the government of the house; reserving so much of the affairs, as serve for a diversion for him; yet never so giving over the reins, but that he sometimes looks how things go, demanding an account,—but not by the way of an account. And this must be done the oftener or the seldomer, according as he is satisfied of his wife's discretion.

---

## CHAP. X.

### THE PARSON IN HIS HOUSE.

THE Parson is very exact in the governing of his house, making it a copy and model for his parish. He knows the temper and pulse of every person in his house; and, accordingly, either meets with their vices, or advanceth their virtues. His wife is either religious, or night and day he is winning her to it.

Instead of the qualities of the world, he requires only three of her. First, a training up of her children and maids in the fear of God; with prayers, and catechising, and all religious duties. Secondly, a curing and healing of all wounds and sores with her own hands; which skill either she brought with her, or he takes care she shall learn it of some religious neighbour. Thirdly, a providing for her family in such sort, as that neither they want a competent sustentation, nor her husband be brought in debt.

His children he first makes Christians, and then commonwealth's men: the one he owes to his heavenly country, the other to his earthly; having no title to either, except he do good to both. Therefore, having seasoned them with all piety—not only of words, in praying and reading, but in actions, in visiting other sick children, and tending their wounds; and sending his charity by them to the poor, and sometimes giving them a little money to do it of themselves, that they get a delight in it, and enter favour with God, who weighs even children's actions<sup>1</sup>—he afterwards turns his care to

<sup>1</sup> 1 Kings xiv. 12, 13.

fit all their dispositions with some calling ; not sparing the eldest, but giving him the prerogative of his father's profession, which happily for his other children he is not able to do. Yet, in binding them apprentices (in case he think fit to do so), he takes care not to put them into vain trades, unbefitting the reverence of their father's calling : such as are taverns for men, and lace-making for women ; because those trades, for the most part, serve but the vices and vanities of the world, which he is to deny, and not augment. However, he resolves with himself never to omit any present good deed of charity, in consideration of providing a stock for his children ; but assures himself that money, thus lent to God, is placed surer for his children's advantage, than if it were given to the Chamber of London. Good deeds, and good breeding, are his two great stocks for his children ; if God give any thing above those, and not spent in them, he blesseth God, and lays it out as he sees cause.

His servants are all religious : and were it not his duty to have them so, it were his profit ; for none are so well served, as by religious servants ;

both because they do best, and because what they do is blessed, and prospers. After religion, he teaches them that three things make a complete servant: truth, and diligence, and neatness or cleanliness.—Those that can read, are allowed times for it; and those that cannot, are taught; for all in his house are either teachers or learners, or both; so that his family is a school of religion; and they all account, that to teach the ignorant is the greatest alms. Even the walls are not idle; but something is written or painted there, which may excite the reader to a thought of piety; especially the 101st Psalm; which is expressed in a fair table, as being the rule of a family. And when they go abroad, his wife among her neighbours is the beginning of good discourses; his children among children; his servants among other servants. So that as in the house of those that are skilled in music, all are musicians; so in the house of a preacher, all are preachers.—He suffers not a lie or equivocation by any means in his house, but counts it the art and secret of governing, to preserve a directness and open plainness in all things; so that all his house knows that there is no help for

a fault done but confession. He himself, or his wife, takes account of sermons, and how every one profits, comparing this year with the last. And, besides the common prayers of the family, he straitly requires of all to pray by themselves, before they sleep at night, and stir out in the morning, and knows what prayers they say; and, till they have learned them, makes them kneel by him: esteeming that this private praying is a more voluntary act in them than when they are called to others' prayers, and that which, when they leave the family, they carry with them.—He keeps his servants between love and fear, according as he finds them. But, generally, he distributes it thus: to his children he shows more love than terror; to his servants, more terror than love; but an old good servant boards as a child.

The furniture of his house is very plain, but clean, whole, and sweet;—as sweet as his garden can make; for he hath no money for such things, charity being his only perfume, which deserves cost when he can spare it. His fare is plain, and common, but wholesome. What he hath is little, but very good. It consisteth most of mutton, beef, and

veal ; if he adds any thing for a great day or a stranger, his garden or orchard supplies it, or his barn, and yard. He goes no further for any entertainment, lest he go into the world ; esteeming it absurd, that *he* should exceed, who teacheth others temperance. But those which his home produceth, he refuseth not ; as coming cheap and easy, and arising from the improvement of things which otherwise would be lost. Wherein he admires and imitates the wonderful providence and thrift of the great Householder of the world. For, there being two things which, as they are, are unuseful to man,—the one for smallness, as crumbs, and scattered corn, and the like ; the other for the foulness, as wash, and dirt, and things thereinto fallen—God hath provided creatures for both : for the first, poultry ; for the second, swine. These save man the labour ; and, doing that which either he could not do, or was not fit for him to do, by taking both sorts of food into them, do as it were dress and prepare both for man in themselves, by growing themselves fit for his table.

The Parson in his house observes fasting-days. And particularly, as Sunday is his day of joy, so



Friday is his day of humiliation : which he celebrates not only with abstinence of diet, but also of company, recreation, and all outward contentments ; and besides, with confession of sins, and all acts of mortification. Now fasting-days contain a treble obligation : first, of eating less that day, than on other days ; secondly, of eating no pleasing or over-nourishing things, as the Israelites did eat sour herbs ; thirdly, of eating no flesh—which is but the determination of the second rule, by authority, to this particular. The two former obligations are much more essential to a true fast, than the third and last ; and fasting-days were fully performed by keeping of the two former, had not authority interposed. So that to eat little, and that unpleasant, is the natural rule of fasting, although it be flesh ; for, since fasting, in Scripture language, is an afflicting of our souls, if a piece of dry flesh at my table be more unpleasant to me than some fish there, certainly to eat the flesh, and not the fish, is to keep the fasting-day naturally. And it is observable, that the prohibiting of flesh came from hot countries, where both flesh alone, and much more with wine, is apt to nourish

more than in cold regions ; and where flesh may be much better spared, and with more safety, than elsewhere where (both the people and the drink being cold and phlegmatic) the eating of flesh is an antidote to both. For it is certain that a weak stomach, being prepossessed with flesh, shall much better brook and bear a draught of beer, than if it had taken before either fish, or roots, or such things ; which will discover itself by spitting, and rheum, or phlegm. To conclude, the Parson, if he be full in health, keeps the three obligations ; eating fish, or roots ; and *that*, for quantity little, for quality unpleasant. If his body be weak and obstructed, as most students' are, he cannot keep the last obligation, nor suffer others in his house, that are so, to keep it : but only the two former ; which also, in diseases of exinanition (as consumptions), must be broken ; for meat was made for man, not man for meat. To all this may be added—not for the emboldening the unruly, but for the comfort of the weak—that not only sickness breaks these obligations of fasting, but sickliness also. For it is as unnatural to do any thing that leads me to a sickness to which I am inclined,

as not to get out of that sickness when I am in it, by any diet. One thing is evident—that an English body, and a student's body, are two great obstructed vessels : and there is nothing that is food, and not physic, which doth less obstruct, than flesh moderately taken ; as, being immoderately taken, it is exceedingly obstructive. And obstructions are the cause of most diseases.

---

## CHAP. XI.

### THE PARSON'S COURTESY.

THE Country Parson owing a debt of charity to the poor, and of courtesy to his other parishioners, he so distinguisheth, that he keeps his money for the poor, and his table for those that are above alms. Not but that the poor are welcome also to his table ; whom he sometimes purposely takes home with him, setting them close by him, and carving for them, both for his own humility, and their comfort, who are much cheered with such friendliness. But since both are to be done, the

better sort invited, and meaner relieved, he chooseth rather to give the poor money; which they can better employ to their own advantage, and suitably to their needs, than so much given in meat at a dinner. Having then invited some of his parish, he taketh his times to do the like to the rest; so that, in the compass of the year, he hath them all with him: because country people are very observant of such things; and will not be persuaded but, being not invited, they are hated. Which persuasion the Parson by all means avoids; knowing that where there are such conceits, there is no room for his doctrine to enter. Yet doth he oftenest invite those whom he sees take best courses; that so both they may be encouraged to persevere, and others spurred to do well, that they may enjoy the like courtesy. For though he desire that all should live well and virtuously, not for any reward of his, but for virtue's sake: yet that will not be so. And therefore as God, although we should love him only for his own sake, yet out of his infinite pity hath set forth heaven for a reward to draw men to piety; and is content, if, at least so, they will become good: so the Country Parson, who is

a diligent observer and tracker of God's ways, sets up as many encouragements to goodness as he can, both in honour, and profit, and fame; that he may, if not the best way, yet *any* way, make his parish good.

---

## CHAP. XII.

### THE PARSON'S CHARITY.

THE Country Parson is full of charity; it is his predominant element. For many and wonderful things are spoken of thee, thou great virtue. To Charity is given the covering of sins<sup>1</sup>, and the forgiveness of sins<sup>2</sup>; the fulfilling of the law<sup>3</sup>; the life of faith<sup>4</sup>; the blessings of this life<sup>5</sup>, and the reward of the next<sup>6</sup>. In brief, it is the body of Religion<sup>7</sup>, and the top of Christian virtues<sup>8</sup>. Wherefore all his works relish of charity. When he riseth in the morning, he bethinketh himself

<sup>1</sup> 1 Pet. iv. 8.

<sup>2</sup> Matt. vi. 14; Luke vii. 47.

<sup>3</sup> Rom. xiii. 10.

<sup>4</sup> James ii. 26.

<sup>5</sup> Prov. xxii. 9; Ps. xli. 2.

<sup>6</sup> Matt. xxv. 40.

<sup>7</sup> John xiii. 35.

<sup>8</sup> 1 Cor. xiii.

what good deeds he can do that day, and presently doth them ; counting that day lost, wherein he hath not exercised his charity.

He first considers his own parish ; and takes care that there be not a beggar or idle person in his parish, but that all be in a competent way of getting their living. This he effects either by bounty, or persuasion, or by authority ; making use of that excellent statute, which binds all parishes to maintain their own. If his parish be rich, he exacts this of them ; if poor, and he able, he easeth them therein. But he gives no set pension to any ; for this in time will lose the name and effect of charity with the poor people, though not with God ; for then they will reckon upon it, as on a debt ; and if it be taken away, though justly, they will murmur and repine as much as he that is dis-seised of his own inheritance. But the Parson, having a double aim, and making a book of his charity, causeth them still to depend on him : and so, by continual and fresh bounties, unexpected to them but resolved to himself, he wins them to praise God more, to live more religiously, and to take more pains in their vocation, as not knowing

when they shall be relieved ; which otherwise they would reckon upon, and turn to idleness. Besides this general provision, he hath other times of opening his hand ; as at great festivals and communions ; not suffering any, that day that he receives, to want a good meal suiting to the joy of the occasion. But especially at hard times and dearths, he even parts his living and life among them ; giving some corn outright, and selling other at under rates : and, when his own stock serves not, working those that are able to the same charity, still pressing it, in the pulpit and out of the pulpit, and never leaving them till he obtain his desire. Yet, in all his charity, he distinguisheth ; giving them most who live best, and take most pains, and are most charged : so is his charity in effect a sermon.

After the consideration of his own parish, he enlargeth himself, if he be able, to the neighbourhood : for that also is some kind of obligation. So doth he also to those at his doors ; whom God puts in his way, and makes his neighbours. But these he helps not without some testimony, except the evidence of the misery bring testimony with it. For though these testimonies also may be falsified,

yet—considering that the law allows these in case they be true, but allows by no means to give without testimony—as he obeys authority in the one, so, *that* being once satisfied, he allows his charity some blindness in the other; especially since, of the two commands, we are more enjoined to be charitable than wise. But evident miseries have a natural privilege, and exemption from all law. Whenever he gives any thing, and sees them labour in thanking of him, he exacts of them to let him alone, and say rather, “God be praised, God be glorified!” that so the thanks may go the right way, and thither only where they are only due. So doth he also, before giving, make them say their prayers first, or the creed, and ten commandments; and, as he finds them perfect, rewards them the more. For other givings are lay and secular; but this is to give like a priest.



## CHAP. XIII.

## THE PARSON'S CHURCH.

THE Country Parson hath a special care of his Church, that all things there be decent and befitting His name by which it is called. Therefore, *First*, he takes order, that all things be in good repair; as walls plastered, windows glazed, floor paved;

seats whole, firm, and uniform, especially that the pulpit, and desk, and communion-table, and font be as they ought, for those great duties that are performed in them. *Secondly*, that the Church be swept, and kept clean, without dust or cobwebs; and, at great festivals, strewed and stuck with boughs, and perfumed with incense. *Thirdly*, that there be fit and proper texts of Scripture everywhere painted; and that all the paintings be good and reverend, not with all light colours or fantasies. *Fourthly*, that the books appointed for authority be there; and all the books appointed for use whole and clean, and those not torn or faded; but there be a string and slightly communion-clothes; and the lines handsome

PRIEST TO THE TEMPLE.

good and costly stuff or cloth, and all kept sw  
and clean in a strong decent chest ; with a chali  
and cover, and a stoop or flagon ; and a bason fo  
alms and offerings : besides which, he hath a poor  
man's box conveniently seated, to receive the  
charity of well-minded people, and to lay up trea-  
sure for the sick and needy.

And all this he doth, not as out of necessity, or  
as putting a holiness in the things, but as desirous  
to keep the middle way between superstition and  
slovenliness ; and as following the apostle's two  
great and admirable rules of this nature ;  
the first whereof is, *Let all things be done decently  
and in order : the second, Let all things be done  
to edification!* For these two rules compris  
and include the double object of our duty, Go  
and our neighbour ; the first being for the hono  
of God, the second for the benefit of our neighb  
So that they excellently score out the way,  
fully and exactly contain, even in external  
indifferent things, what course is to be taken  
put them to great shame, who deny the Scr  
perfect.

1 1 Cor. xiv. 26.

## CHAP. XIII.

## THE PARSON'S CHURCH.

THE Country Parson hath a special care of his Church, that all things there be decent and befitting His name by which it is called. Therefore, *First*, he takes order, that all things be in good repair ; as walls plastered, windows glazed, floor paved, seats whole, firm, and uniform, especially that the pulpit, and desk, and communion-table, and font, be as they ought, for those great duties that are performed in them. *Secondly*, that the Church be swept, and kept clean, without dust or cobwebs ; and, at great festivals, strewed and stuck with boughs, and perfumed with incense. *Thirdly*, that there be fit and proper texts of Scripture every where painted ; and that all the paintings be grave and reverend, not with light colours or foolish antics. *Fourthly*, that all the books appointed by authority be there ; and those not torn or fouled, but whole and clean, and well bound : and that there be a fitting and sightly communion-cloth of fine linen, with a handsome and seemly carpet of

good and costly stuff or cloth, and all kept sweet and clean in a strong decent chest ; with a chalice and cover, and a stoop or flagon ; and a bason for alms and offerings : besides which, he hath a poor-man's box conveniently seated, to receive the charity of well-minded people, and to lay up treasure for the sick and needy.

And all this he doth, not as out of necessity, or as putting a holiness in the things, but as desirous to keep the middle way between superstition and slovenliness ; and as following the apostle's two great and admirable rules in things of this nature ; the first whereof is, *Let all things be done decently and in order* : the second, *Let all things be done to edification*<sup>1</sup>. For these two rules comprise and include the double object of our duty, God, and our neighbour ; the first being for the honour of God, the second for the benefit of our neighbour. So that they excellently score out the way, and fully and exactly contain, even in external and indifferent things, what course is to be taken ; and put them to great shame, who deny the Scripture to be perfect.

<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. xiv. 26.

## CHAP. XIV.

## THE PARSON IN CIRCUIT.

THE Country Parson, upon the afternoons in the week-days, takes occasion sometimes to visit in person, now one quarter of his parish, now another. For there he shall find his flock most naturally as they are, wallowing in the midst of their affairs; whereas on Sundays it is easy for them to compose themselves to order, which they put on as their holiday clothes, and come to church in frame, but commonly the next day put off both.

When he comes to any house, first he blesseth it; then as he finds the persons of the house employed, so he forms his discourse.—Those that he finds religiously employed, he both commends them much, and furthers them, when he is gone, in their employment: as, if he finds them reading, he furnisheth them with good books; if curing poor people, he supplies them with receipts, and instructs them farther in that skill, showing them how acceptable such works are to God, and wishing

them ever to do the cures with their own hands, and not to put them over to servants.

Those that he finds busy in the works of their calling, he commendeth them also : for it is a good and just thing for every one to do their own business. But then he admonisheth them of two things : *First*, that they dive not too deep into worldly affairs, plunging themselves over head and ears into carking and caring ; but that they so labour, as neither to labour anxiously, nor distrustfully, nor profanely. Then they labour anxiously, when they overdo it, to the loss of their quiet and health. Then distrustfully, when they doubt God's providence, thinking that their own labour is the cause of their thriving, as if it were in their own hands to thrive or not to thrive. Then they labour profanely, when they set themselves to work like brute beasts, never raising their thoughts to God, nor sanctifying their labour with daily prayer ; when on the Lord's day they do unnecessary servile work, or in time of divine service on other holy days, except in cases of extreme poverty, and in the seasons of seedtime and harvest. *Secondly*, he adviseth them so to labour for wealth and main-

tenance, as that they make not that the end of their labour : but that they may have wherewithal to serve God the better, and do good deeds. After these discourses, if they be poor and needy whom he thus finds labouring, he gives them somewhat ; and opens not only his mouth, but his purse to their relief, that so they go on more cheerfully in their vocation, and himself be ever the more welcome to them.

Those that the Parson finds idle or ill employed, he chides not at first, for that were neither civil nor profitable ; but always in the close, before he departs from them. Yet in this he distinguisheth. For if he be a plain countryman, he reproveth him plainly ; for they are not sensible of fineness. If they be of a higher quality, they commonly are quick, and sensible, and very tender of reproof ; and therefore he lays his discourse so, that he comes to the point very leisurely ; and oftentimes, as Nathan did, in the person of another, making them to reprove themselves. However, one way or other, he ever reproveth them, that he may keep himself pure, and not be entangled in others' sins. Neither in this doth he forbear, though there be

company by. For as, when the offence is particular, and against *me*, I am to follow our Saviour's rule, and to take my brother aside and reprove him ; so, when the offence is public, and against God, I am then to follow the apostle's rule<sup>1</sup>, and to *rebuke openly* that which is done openly.

Besides these occasional discourses, the Parson questions what order is kept in the house ; as about prayers morning and evening on their knees, reading of Scripture, catechising, singing of psalms at their work and on holidays,—who can read, who not : and sometimes he hears the children read himself, and blesseth them ; encouraging also the servants to learn to read, and offering to have them taught on holidays by his servants. If the Parson were ashamed of particularising in these things, he were not fit to be a Parson. But he holds the rule, that nothing is little in God's service : if it once have the honour of THAT NAME, it grows great instantly. Wherefore, neither disdaineth he to enter in the poorest cottage, though he even creep into it, and though it smell never so loathsomely. For both God is there also, and

<sup>1</sup> 1 Tim. v. 20.



those for whom God died. And so much the rather doth he so, as his access to the poor is more comfortable than to the rich ; and, in regard of himself, it is more humiliation.

These are the Parson's general aims in his circuit ; but with these he mingles other discourses for conversation sake, and to make his higher purposes slip the more easily.

---

## CHAP. XV.

### THE PARSON COMFORTING.

THE Country Parson, when any of his cure is sick, or afflicted with loss of friend or estate, or any ways distressed, fails not to afford his best comforts : and rather goes to them, than sends for the afflicted ; though they can, and otherwise ought to come to him. To this end he hath thoroughly digested all the points of consolation, as having continual use of them ; such as are from God's *general* providence, extended even to lilies ;—from his *particular*, to his church ;—from his promises ;—from the examples of all saints that ever were ;—from Christ

himself, perfecting our Redemption no other way than by sorrow ;—from the benefit of affliction, which softens and works the stubborn heart of man ;—from the certainty both of deliverance and reward, if we faint not ;—from the miserable comparison of the moment of griefs here, with the weight of joys hereafter. Besides this, in his visiting the sick, or otherwise afflicted, he followeth the Church's counsel, namely, in persuading them to particular confession ; labouring to make them understand the great good use of this ancient and pious ordinance, and how necessary it is in some cases. He also urgeth them to do some pious charitable works, as a necessary evidence and fruit of their faith, at that time especially. The participation of the holy sacrament,—how comfortable and sovereign a medicine it is to all sin-sick souls ; what strength, and joy, and peace it administers against all temptations, even to death itself—he plainly and *generally* intimateth to the disaffected or sick person ; that so the hunger and thirst after it may come rather from themselves, than from his persuasion.

## CHAP. XVI.

## THE PARSON A FATHER.

THE Country Parson is not only a father to his flock, but also professes himself thoroughly of the opinion, carrying it about with him as full as if he had begot his whole parish. And of this he makes great use. For, by this means, when any sins, he hateth him not as an officer, but pities him as a father. And even in those wrongs which either in tithing or otherwise are done to his own person, he considers the offender as a child ; and forgives, so he may have any sign of amendment. So also when, after many admonitions, any continue to be refractory, yet he gives him not over, but is long before he proceeds to disinheriting : or, perhaps, never goes so far, knowing that some are called at the eleventh hour ; and therefore he still expects and waits, lest he should determine God's hour of coming ; which, as he cannot, touching the last day, so neither touching the intermediate days of conversion.

## CHAP. XVII.

## THE PARSON IN JOURNEY.

THE Country Parson, when a just occasion calleth him out of his parish (which he diligently and strictly weigheth, his parish being all his joy and thought), leaveth not his ministry behind him; but is himself wherever he is. Therefore those he meets on the way he blesseth audibly: and with those he overtakes, or that overtake him, he begins good discourses, such as may edify; interposing sometimes some short and honest refreshments, which may make his other discourses more welcome, and less tedious. And when he comes to his inn, he refuseth not to join, that he may enlarge the glory of God to the company he is in by a due blessing of God for their safe arrival, and saying grace at meat; and at going to bed, by giving the host notice, that he will have prayers in the hall, wishing him to inform his guests thereof, that if any be willing to partake, they may resort thither. The like he doth in the morning; using plea-

santly the outlandish proverb, that "Prayers and provender never hinder journey."

When he comes to any other house, where his kindred or other relations give him any authority over the family, if he be to stay for a time, he considers diligently the state thereof to Godward; and that in two points, *First*, what disorders there are either in apparel or diet, or too open a buttery, or reading vain books, or swearing, or breeding up children to no calling, but in idleness, or the like. *Secondly*, what means of piety, whether daily prayers be used, grace, reading of Scriptures, and other good books; how Sundays, holidays, and fasting-days are kept. And, accordingly as he finds any defect in these, he first considers with himself what kind of remedy fits the temper of the house best, and then he faithfully and boldly applieth it; yet seasonably and discreetly, by taking aside the lord or lady, or master and mistress of the house, and showing them clearly, that *they* respect them most who wish them best, and that not a desire to meddle with others' affairs, but the earnestness to do all the good he can, moves him to say thus and thus.

## CHAP. XVIII.

## THE PARSON IN SENTINEL.

THE Country Parson, wherever he is, keeps God's watch ; that is, there is nothing spoken or done in the company where he is, but comes under his test and censure. If it be well spoken or done, he takes occasion to commend and enlarge it ; if ill, he presently lays hold of it, lest the poison steal into some young and unwary spirits, and possess them even before they themselves heed it. But this he doth discreetly, with mollifying and suppling words ;—"this was not so well said, as it might have been forborne ;"—"we cannot allow this." Or else, if the thing will admit interpretation,—"your meaning is not thus, but thus ;"—or "so far, indeed, what you say is true and well said ; but *this* will not stand." This is called keeping God's watch, when the baits which the enemy lays in company are discovered and avoided. This is to be on God's side, and be true

to his party.—Besides, if he perceive in company any discourse tending to ill, either by the wickedness or quarrelsomeness thereof, he either prevents it judiciously, or breaks it off seasonably, by some diversion. Wherein a pleasantness of disposition is of great use, men being willing to sell the interest and engagement of their discourses for no price sooner than that of mirth ; whither the nature of man, loving refreshment, gladly betakes itself, even to the loss of honour.

---

## CHAP. XIX.

### THE PARSON IN REFERENCE.

THE Country Parson is sincere and upright in all his relations. And, *First*, he is just to his country ; as when he is set at an armour or horse, he borrows them not to serve the turn, nor provides slight and unuseful, but such as are every way fitting to do his country true and laudable service, when occasion requires. To do otherwise, is deceit ; and therefore not for him who is hearty and true in all

his ways, as being the servant of Him in whom there was no guile. Likewise in any other country-duty, he considers what is the end of any command, and then he suits things faithfully accordingly to that end. *Secondly*, he carries himself very respectfully, as to all the fathers of the church, so especially to his diocesan, honouring him both in word and behaviour, and resorting unto him in any difficulty, either in his studies or in his parish. He observes visitations; and, being there, makes due use of them, as of clergy councils for the benefit of the diocess. And therefore, before he comes, having observed some defects in the ministry, he then either in sermon, if he preach, or at some other time of the day, propounds among his brethren what were fitting to be done. *Thirdly*, he keeps good correspondence with all the neighbouring pastors round about him, performing for them any ministerial office, which is not to the prejudice of his own parish. Likewise he welcomes to his house any minister, how poor or mean soever, with as joyful a countenance, as if he were to entertain some great lord. *Fourthly*, he fulfils the duty and debt of neighbourhood, to



all the parishes which are near him. For,—the apostle's rule<sup>1</sup> being admirable and large, that we should do *whatsoever things are honest, or just, or pure, or lovely, or of good report, if there be any virtue, or any praise*: and neighbourhood being ever reputed, even among the heathen, as an obligation to do good, rather than to those that are farther, where things are otherwise equal,—therefore he satisfies this duty also. Especially, if God have sent any calamity, either by fire or famine, to any neighbouring parish, then he expects no brief, but taking his parish together the next Sunday or holiday, and exposing to them the uncertainty of human affairs, none knowing whose turn may be next,—and then, when he hath affrighted them with this, exposing the obligation of charity and neighbourhood, he first gives himself liberally, and then incites them to give; making together a sum either to be sent, or, which were more comfortable, altogether choosing some fit day to carry it themselves, and cheer the afflicted. So, if any neighbouring village be overburdened with poor, and his own less charged, he finds some way of relieving

<sup>1</sup> Phil. iv. 8.

it, and reducing the manna and bread of charity to some equality ; representing to his people that the blessing of God to them ought to make them the more charitable, and not the less, lest he cast their neighbour's poverty on them also.

---

## CHAP. XX.

### THE PARSON IN GOD'S STEAD.

THE Country Parson is in God's stead to his parish, and dischargeth God what he can of his promises. Wherefore there is nothing done, either well or ill, whereof he is not the rewarder or punisher. If he chance to find any reading in another's Bible, he provides him one of his own. If he find another giving a poor man a penny, he gives him a tester for it, if the giver be fit to receive it ; or if he be of a condition above such gifts, he sends him a good book, or easeth him in his tithes, telling him, when he hath forgotten it, " This I do, because at such and such a time you were charitable." This is in some sort

a discharging of God as concerning this life, who hath promised that godliness shall be gainful : but, in the other, God is his own immediate paymaster, rewarding all good deeds to their full proportion. The Parson's punishing of sin and vice, is rather by withdrawing his bounty and courtesy from the parties offending, or by private or public reproof, as the case requires, than by causing them to be presented or otherwise complained of. And yet as the malice of the person, or heinousness of the crime may be, he is careful to see condign punishment inflicted, and with truly godly zeal, without hatred to the person, hungereth and thirsteth after righteous punishment of unrighteousness. Thus, both in rewarding virtue and in punishing vice, the Parson endeavoureth to be in God's stead : knowing that country people are drawn or led by sense, more than by faith ; by present rewards or punishments, more than by future.

## CHAP. XXI.

## THE PARSON CATECHISING.

THE Country Parson values catechising highly. For,—there being three points of his duty: the one, to infuse a competent knowledge of salvation in every one of his flock; the other, to multiply and build up this knowledge to a spiritual temple; the third, to inflame this knowledge, to press and drive it to practice, turning it to reformation of life, by pithy and lively exhortations;—catechising is the first point, and, but by catechising, the other cannot be attained. Besides, whereas in sermons there is a kind of state, in catechising there is a humbleness very suitable to Christian regeneration; which exceedingly delights him, as by way of exercise upon himself, and by way of preaching to himself, for the advancing of his own mortification; for in preaching to others, he forgets not himself, but is first a sermon to himself, and then to others, growing with the growth of his parish.

He useth and preferreth the ordinary church

catechism ; partly for obedience to authority, partly for uniformity sake, that the same common truths may be every where professed ; especially since many remove from parish to parish, who, like Christian soldiers, are to give the word, and to satisfy the congregation by their catholic answers. —He exacts of all the doctrine of the catechism ; of the younger sort, the very words ; of the elder, the substance. Those he catechiseth publicly ; these privately, giving age honour, according to the apostle's rule<sup>1</sup>. He requires all to be present at catechising : first, for the authority of the work ; secondly, that parents and masters, as they hear the answers prove, may when they come home either commend or reprove, either reward or punish ; thirdly, that those of the elder sort, who are not well grounded, may then by an honourable way take occasion to be better instructed ; fourthly, that those who are well grown in the knowledge of religion may examine their grounds, renew their vows, and, by occasion of both, enlarge their meditations.

When once all have learned the words of the

<sup>1</sup> Tim. v. 1.

catechism, he thinks it the most useful way that a Pastor can take, to go over the same, but in other words, for many say the catechism by rote, as parrots, without ever piercing into the sense of it. In this course the order of the catechism would be kept, but the rest varied ; as thus : In the creed—"How came this world to be as it is ? Was it made, or came it by chance ? Who made it ? Did you see God make it ? Then are there some things to be believed that are not seen ? Is this the nature of belief ? Is not Christianity full of such things as are not to be seen, but believed ? —You said God made the world ? Who is God ?" —and so forward, requiring answers to all these ; and helping and cherishing the answerer, by making the question very plain with comparisons ; and making much even of a word of truth from him. This order being used to one, would be a little varied to another. And this is an admirable way of teaching, wherein the catechised will at length find delight ; and by which the catechiser, if he once get the skill of it, will draw out of ignorant and silly souls even the dark and deep points of religion. Socrates did thus in philosophy, who

held that the seeds of all truths lay in every body ; and accordingly, by questions well ordered, he found philosophy in silly tradesmen. That position will not hold in Christianity, because it contains things above nature ; but after that the catechism is once learned, that which nature is towards philosophy, the catechism is towards divinity. To this purpose some dialogues in Plato were worth the reading, where the singular dexterity of Socrates in this kind may be observed and imitated. Yet the skill consists but in these three points. *First*, an aim and mark of the whole discourse, whither to drive the answerer (which the questionist must have in his mind before any question be propounded), upon which and to which the questions are to be chained. *Secondly*, a most plain and easy framing the question, even containing in virtue the answer also, especially to the more ignorant. *Thirdly*, when the answerer sticks, an illustrating the thing by something else which he knows, making what he knows to serve him in that which he knows not. As when the Parson once demanded, after other questions about man's misery, "Since man is so miserable, what is to be done?" and the

answerer could not tell : he asked him again, what he would do if he were in a ditch. This familiar illustration made the answer so plain, that he was even ashamed of his ignorance ; for he could not but say, he would haste out of it as fast as he could. Then he proceeded to ask, whether he could get out of the ditch alone, or whether he needed a helper, and who was that helper.—This is the skill, and doubtless the Holy Scripture intends thus much when it condescends to the naming of a plough, a hatchet, a bushel, leaven, boys piping and dancing ; showing that things of ordinary use are not only to serve in the way of drudgery, but to be washed and cleansed, and serve for lights even of heavenly truths. This is the practice which the Parson so much commends to all his fellow-labourers ; the secret of whose good consists in this, that at sermons and prayers men may sleep or wander ; but when one is asked a question, he must discover what he is. This practice exceeds even sermons in teaching : but, there being two things in sermons, the one informing, the other inflaming ; as sermons come short of questions in the one, so they far exceed them in



the other. For questions cannot inflame or ravish; that must be done by a set, and laboured, and continued speech.

---

## CHAP. XXII.

### THE PARSON IN SACRAMENTS.

THE Country Parson, being to administer the sacraments, is at a stand with himself, how or what behaviour to assume for so holy things. Especially at communion times he is in a great confusion, as being not only to receive God, but to break and administer him. Neither finds he any issue in this, but to throw himself down at the throne of grace, saying, "Lord, thou knowest what thou didst, when thou appointedst it to be done thus; therefore do thou fulfil what thou didst appoint: for thou art not only the feast, but the way to it."

At baptism, being himself in white, he requires the presence of all, and baptiseth not willingly but on Sundays or great days. He admits no vain or idle names, but such as are usual and accustomed. He says that prayer with great devotion, where God

is thanked for calling us to the knowledge of his grace ; baptism being a blessing, that the world hath not the like. He willingly and cheerfully crosseth the child ; and thinketh the ceremony not only innocent, but reverend. He instructeth the godfathers and godmothers, that it is no complimental or light thing to sustain that place, but a great honour, and no less burden ; as being done both in the presence of God and his saints, and by way of undertaking for a Christian soul. He adviseth all to call to mind their baptism often. For if wise men have thought it the best way of preserving a state, to reduce it to its principles by which it grew great ; certainly it is the safest course for Christians also to meditate on their baptism often (being the first step into their great and glorious calling), and upon what terms and with what vows they were baptized.

At the times of the holy communion, he first takes order with the churchwardens, that the elements be of the best ; not cheap or coarse ; much less ill-tasted or unwholesome.—Secondly, he considers and looks into the ignorance or carelessness of his flock, and accordingly applies himself with catechisings and lively exhortations, not

on the Sunday of the communion only (for then it is too late), but the Sunday, or Sundays, before the communion; or on the eves of all those days. If there be any who, having not received yet, are to enter into this great work, he takes the more pains with them, that he may lay the foundation of future blessings. The time of every one's first receiving is not so much by years, as by understanding. Particularly, the rule may be this. When any one can distinguish the sacramental from common bread, knowing the institution and the difference, he ought to receive, of what age soever. Children and youths are usually deferred too long, under pretence of devotion to the sacrament; but it is for want of instruction: their understandings being ripe enough for ill things, and why not then for better? But parents and masters should make haste in this as to a great purchase for their children and servants: which while they defer both sides suffer—the one, in wanting many excitings of grace; the other, in being worse served and obeyed. The saying of the catechism is necessary, but not enough; because to answer in form may still admit ignorance. But the questions must be propounded

loosely and wildly, and then the answerer will discover what he is.—Thirdly, for the manner of receiving, as the Parson useth all reverence himself, so he administers to none but to the reverent. The feast indeed requires sitting, because it is a feast; but man's unpreparedness asks kneeling. He that comes to the sacrament hath the confidence of a guest; and he that kneels confesseth himself an unworthy one, and therefore differs from other feasters; but he that sits, or lies, puts up to an apostle. Contentiousness in a feast of charity is more scandal than any posture.—Fourthly, touching the frequency of the communion, the Parson celebrates it, if not duly once a month, yet at least five or six times in the year; as, at Easter, Christmas, Whitsuntide, before and after harvest, and the beginning of Lent. And this he doth, not only for the benefit of the work, but also for the discharge of the churchwardens; who being to present all who receive not thrice a year, if there be but three communions, neither can all the people so order their affairs as to receive just at those times, nor the churchwardens so well take notice, who receives thrice, and who not.

## CHAP. XXIII.

## THE PARSON'S COMPLETENESS.

THE Country Parson desires to be all to his parish; and not only a Pastor, but a Lawyer also, and a Physician. Therefore he endures not that any of his flock should go to law; but, in any controversy, that they should resort to him as their judge. To this end he hath gotten to himself some insight in things ordinarily incident and controverted, by experience, and by reading some initiatory treatises in the law, with Dalton's Justice of Peace, and the abridgments of the statutes; as also by discourse with men of that profession, whom he hath ever some cases to ask, when he meets with them; holding that rule, that to put men to discourse of that wherein they are most eminent, is the most gainful way of conversation. Yet, whenever any controversy is brought to him, he never decides it alone, but sends for three or four of the ablest of the parish to hear the cause with him, whom he makes to deliver their opinion

first; out of which he gathers, in case he be ignorant himself, what to hold: and so the thing passeth with more authority and less envy. In judging, he follows that which is altogether right; so that if the poorest man of the parish detain but a pin unjustly from the richest, he absolutely restores it, as a judge; but when he hath so done, then he assumes the Parson, and exhorts to charity. Nevertheless there may happen sometimes some cases wherein he chooseth to permit his parishioners rather to make use of the law than himself: as in cases of an obscure and dark nature, not easily determinable by lawyers themselves; or in cases of high consequence, as establishing of inheritances; or lastly, when the persons in difference are of a contentious disposition, and cannot be gained, but that they still fall from all compromises that have been made. But then he shows them how to go to law, even as brethren, and not as enemies, neither avoiding therefore one another's company, much less defaming one another.

Now, as the Parson is in law, so is he in sickness also. If there be any of his flock sick, he is their physician,—or at least his wife; of whom, instead

of the qualities of the world, he asks no other, but to have the skill of healing a wound, or helping the sick. But if neither himself nor his wife have the skill, and his means serve, he keeps some young practitioner in his house, for the benefit of his parish; whom yet he ever exhorts not to exceed his bounds, but in difficult cases to call in help. If all fail, then he keeps good correspondence with some neighbour physician, and entertains him for the cure of his parish. Yet it is easy for any scholar to attain to such a measure of physic, as may be of much use to him, both for himself and others. This is done by seeing one anatomy, reading one book of physic, having one herbal by him. And let Fernelius be the physic author, for he writes briefly, neatly, and judiciously; especially let his Method of Physic be diligently perused, as being the practical part, and of most use. Now, both the reading of him and the knowing of herbs may be done at such times, as they may be a help and a recreation to more divine studies, nature serving grace both in comfort of diversion, and the benefit of application when need requires it; as also by way of illustration, even as our

Saviour made plants and seeds to teach the people. For he was the true *householder, who bringeth out of his treasury things new and old*; the old things of philosophy, and the new of grace; and maketh the one serve the other. And, I conceive, our Saviour did this for three reasons. First, that by familiar things he might make his doctrine slip the more easily into the hearts even of the meanest. Secondly, that labouring people, whom he chiefly considered, might have every where monuments of his doctrine; remembering, in gardens, his mustard-seed and lilies; in the field, his seed-corn and tares: and so not be drowned altogether in the works of their vocation, but sometimes lift up their minds to better things, even in the midst of their pains. Thirdly, that he might set a copy for parsons.—In the knowledge of simples, wherein the manifold wisdom of God is wonderfully to be seen, one thing would be carefully observed; which is, to know what herbs may be used instead of drugs of the same nature, and to make the garden the shop. For home-bred medicines are both more easy for the Parson's purse, and more familiar for all men's bodies. So, where the apothecary useth,



either for loosing, rhubarb; or for binding, bolearmena; the Parson useth damask or white roses for the one, and plaintain, shepherd's-purse, knot-grass for the other, and that with better success. As for spices, he doth not only prefer home-bred things before them, but condemns them for vanities, and so shuts them out of his family: esteeming that there is no spice comparable, for herbs, to rosemary, thyme, savory, mints; and for seeds, to fennel, and caraway-seeds. Accordingly, for salves, his wife seeks not the city, but prefers her garden and fields before all outlandish gums. And surely hyssop, valerian, mercury, adder's-tongue, yerrow, melilot, and St. John's-wort, made into a salve; and elder, camomile, mallows, comphrey, and smallage, made into a poultice, have done great and rare cures. In curing of any, the Parson and his family use to premise prayers; for this is to cure like a Parson, and this raiseth the action from the shop to the church.—But though the Parson sets forward all charitable deeds, yet he looks not in this point of curing beyond his own parish; except the person be so poor that he is not able to reward the physician. For, as he is charitable, so

he is just also. Now it is a justice and debt to the commonwealth he lives in, not to encroach on others' professions, but to live on his own. And justice is the ground of charity.

---

## CHAP. XXIV.

### THE PARSON ARGUING.

THE Country Parson, if there be any of his parish that hold strange doctrines, useth all possible diligence to reduce them to the common faith.—The first means he useth is prayer; beseeching the Father of Lights to open their eyes, and to give him power so to fit his discourse to them, that it may effectually pierce their hearts, and convert them.—The second means, is a very loving and sweet usage of them, both in going to and sending for them often, and in finding out courtesies to place on them; as in their tithes, or otherwise.—The third means is the observation what is the main foundation and pillar of their cause, whereon they rely: as, if he be a Papist, the Church is the

hinge he turns on; if a schismatic, scandal. Wherefore the Parson hath diligently examined these two with himself. As, what the church is; how it began; how it proceeded; whether it be a rule to itself; whether it hath a rule; whether, having a rule, it ought not to be guided by it; whether any rule in the world be obscure; and how then should the best be so; at least in fundamental things; the obscurity in some points being the exercise of the church, the light in the foundations being the guide; the church needing both an evidence and an exercise.—So, for scandal:—what scandal is; when given or taken; whether, there being two precepts, one of obeying authority, the other of not giving scandal, *that* ought not to be preferred,—especially since in disobeying there is scandal also; whether things, once indifferent, being made by the precept of authority more than indifferent, it be in our power to omit or refuse them. These and the like points he hath accurately digested; having ever, besides, two great helps and powerful persuaders on his side. The one, a strict religious life; the other, an humble and ingenuous search of truth, being unmoved in argu-

ing, and void of all contentiousness : which are two great lights able to dazzle the eyes of the misled, while they consider, that God cannot be wanting to them in doctrine, to whom he is so gracious in life.

---

## CHAP. XXV.

### THE PARSON PUNISHING.

WHENSOEVER the Country Parson proceeds so far as to call in authority, and to do such things of legal opposition, either in the presenting or punishing of any, as the vulgar ever construes for signs of ill-will, he forbears not in any wise to use the delinquent as before, in his behaviour and carriage towards him, not avoiding his company, or doing any thing of averseness, save in the very act of punishment. Neither doth he esteem him for an enemy, but as a brother still; except some small and temporary estranging may corroborate the punishment to a better subduing and humbling of the delinquent. Which if it happily take effect, he then comes on the faster, and makes so much

the more of him, as before he alienated himself; doubling his regards, and showing, by all means, that the delinquent's return is to his advantage.

---

## CHAP. XXVI.

### THE PARSON'S EYE.

THE Country Parson, at spare times from action, standing on a hill and considering his flock, discovers two sorts of vices, and two sorts of vicious persons. There are some vices, whose natures are always clear and evident; as adultery, murder, hatred, lying, &c. There are other vices, whose natures, at least in the beginning, are dark and obscure; as covetousness, and gluttony. So likewise there are some persons, who abstain not even from known sins: there are others, who when they know a sin evidently, they commit it not. It is true, indeed, they are long in knowing it, being partial to themselves, and witty to others who shall reprove them for it. A man may be both covetous and intemperate, and yet hear sermons against both,

and himself condemn both in good earnest. And the reason hereof is, because the nature of these vices being not evidently discussed or known commonly, the beginnings of them are not easily observable; and the beginnings of them are not observed, because of the sudden passing from that which was just now lawful, to that which is presently unlawful, even in one continued action. So, a man dining eats at first lawfully: but, proceeding on comes to do unlawfully, even before he is aware; not knowing the bounds of the action, nor when his eating begins to be unlawful. So, a man storing up money for his necessary provisions, both in present for his family, and in future for his children, hardly perceives when his storing becomes unlawful: yet is there a period for his storing, and a point or centre when his storing, which was even now good, passeth from good to bad.—Wherefore the Parson, being true to his business, hath exactly sifted the definitions of all virtues and vices; especially canvassing those whose natures are most stealing, and beginnings uncertain. Particularly, concerning these two vices; not because they are all that are of this dark and creeping dis-

position, but, for example sake, and because they are most common ; he thus thinks :—

First, for covetousness, he lays this ground. Whosoever, when a just occasion calls, either spends not at all, or not in some proportion to God's blessing upon him, is covetous. The reason of the ground is manifest ; because wealth is given to that end, to supply our occasions. Now, if I do not give every thing its end, I abuse the creature ; I am false to my reason, which should guide me ; I offend the Supreme Judge, in perverting that order which he hath set both to things and to reason. The application of the ground would be infinite. But, in brief, a poor man is an occasion ; my country is an occasion ; my friend is an occasion ; my table is an occasion ; my apparel is an occasion. If in all these, and those more which concern me, I either do nothing, or pinch, and scrape, and squeeze blood, undecently to the station wherein God hath placed me, I am covetous. More particularly, and to give one instance for all ; if God have given me servants, and I either provide too little for them, or that which is unwholesome, being sometimes baned meat, sometimes too salt,

and so not competent nourishment, I am covetous. I bring this example, because men usually think, that servants for their money are as other things that they buy; even as a piece of wood, which they may cut, or hack, or throw into the fire; and, so they pay them their wages, all is well.—Nay, to descend yet more particularly; if a man hath wherewithal to buy a spade, and yet he chooseth rather to use his neighbour's, and wear out that, he is covetous. Nevertheless, few bring covetousness thus low, or consider it so narrowly; which yet ought to be done, since there is a justice in the least things, and for the least there shall be a judgment. Country people are full of these petty injustices, being cunning to make use of another, and spare themselves. And scholars ought to be diligent in the observation of these, and driving of their general school-rules even to the smallest actions of life: which, while they dwell in their books, they will never find; but, being seated in the country, and doing their duty faithfully, they will soon discover; especially if they carry their eyes ever open, and fix them on their charge, and not on their preferment.



Secondly, for gluttony, the Parson lays this ground. He that either for quantity eats more than his health or employment will bear, or for quality is lickerish after dainties, is a glutton;—as he that eats more than his estate will bear, is a prodigal;—and he that eats offensively to the company, either in his order or length of eating, is scandalous and uncharitable. These three rules generally comprehend the faults of eating; and the truth of them needs no proof. So that men must eat, neither to the disturbance of their health, nor of their affairs (which, being overburdened, or studying dainties too much, they cannot well despatch), nor of their estate, nor of their brethren. One act in these things is bad, but it is the custom and habit that names a glutton. Many think they are at more liberty than they are, as if they were masters of their health; and, so they will stand to the pain, all is well. But to eat to one's hurt, comprehends, besides the hurt, an act against reason, because it is unnatural to hurt one's self; and this they are *not* masters of. Yet of hurtful things, I am more bound to abstain from those which by mine own experience I have found hurt-

ful, than from those which by a common tradition and vulgar knowledge are reputed to be so.—That which is said of hurtful meats, extends to hurtful drinks also. As for the quantity, touching our employments, none must eat so as to disable themselves from a fit discharging either of divine duties, or duties of their calling. So that, if after dinner, they are not fit (or unwieldy) either to pray or work, they are gluttons. Not that all must presently work after dinner. For they rather must *not* work, especially students, and those that are weakly. But that they must rise so, as that it is not meat or drink that hinders them from working. To guide them in this, there are three rules. First, the custom and knowledge of their own body, and what it can well digest. The second, the feeling of themselves in time of eating; which because it is deceitful (for one thinks in eating that he can eat more than afterwards he finds true). The third is the observation with what appetite they sit down. This last rule, joined with the first, never fails. For, knowing what one usually can well digest, and feeling when I go to meat in what disposition I am, either hungry or

not ; according as I feel myself, either I take my wonted proportion or diminish of it. Yet physicians bid those that would live in health, not keep a uniform diet, but to feed variously ; now more, now less. And Gerson, a spiritual man, wisheth all to incline rather to too much, than to too little ; his reason is, because diseases of exinanition are more dangerous than diseases of repletion. But the Parson distinguisheth according to his double aim ; either of abstinence a moral virtue, or mortification a divine. When he deals with any that is heavy and carnal, he gives him those freer rules. But when he meets with a refined and heavenly disposition, he carries them higher, even sometimes to a forgetting of themselves ; knowing that there is one who, when they forget, remembers for them. As when the people hungered and thirsted after our Saviour's doctrine, and tarried so long at it that they would have fainted had they returned empty, he suffered it not ; but rather made food miraculously, than suffer so good desires to miscarry.

## CHAP. XXVII.

## THE PARSON IN MIRTH.

THE Country Parson is generally sad, because he knows nothing but the cross of Christ ; his mind being fixed on it with those nails wherewith his Master was. Or, if he have any leisure to look off from thence, he meets continually with two most sad spectacles, Sin and Misery ; God dishonoured every day, and man afflicted. Nevertheless, he sometimes refresheth himself, as knowing that nature will not bear everlasting droopings, and that pleasantness of disposition is a great key to do good : not only because all men shun the company of perpetual severity ; but also for that, when they are in company, instructions seasoned with pleasantness both enter sooner, and root deeper. Wherefore he condescends to human frailties, both in himself and others ; and intermingles some mirth in his discourses occasionally, according to the pulse of the hearer.

## CHAP. XXVIII.

## THE PARSON IN CONTEMPT.

THE Country Parson knows well, that—both for the general ignominy which is cast upon the profession, and much more for those rules which out of his choicest judgment he hath resolved to observe, and which are described in this book,—he must be despised. Because this hath been the portion of God his Master, and of God's saints his brethren; and this is foretold, that it shall be so still, until things be no more. Nevertheless, according to the apostle's rule, he endeavours that none shall despise him; especially in his own parish he suffers it not, to his utmost power; for that, where contempt is, there is no room for instruction. This he procures, *First*, by his holy and unblamable life; which carries a reverence with it, even above contempt. *Secondly*, by a courteous carriage and winning behaviour. He that will be respected, must respect; doing kindnesses, but receiving none, at least of those who are apt to despise; for this

argues a height and eminency of mind, which is not easily despised, except it degenerate to pride. *Thirdly*, by a bold and impartial reproof, even of the best in the parish, when occasion requires : for this may produce hatred in those that are reprov'd, but never contempt, either in them or others. *Lastly*, if the contempt shall proceed so far as to do any thing punishable by law, as contempt is apt to do if it be not thwarted, the Parson, having a due respect both to the person and to the cause, referreth the whole matter to the examination and punishment of those which are in authority ; that so, the sentence lighting upon one, the example may reach to all.

But if the contempt be not punishable by law ; or, being so, the Parson think it in his discretion either unfit or bootless to contend ; then when any despises him, he takes it either in an humble way, saying nothing at all ;—or else in a slighting way, showing that reproaches touch him no more than a stone thrown against heaven, where he is and lives ;—or in a sad way, grieved at his own and others' sins, which continually break God's laws, and dishonour him with those mouths which he

continually fills and feeds;—or else in a doctrinal way, saying to the contemner, “Alas! why do you thus? you hurt yourself, not me; he that throws a stone at another, hits himself;” and so, between gentle reasoning and pitying, he overcomes the evil;—or, lastly, in a triumphant way, being glad and joyful that he is made conformable to his Master, and, being in the world as *he* was, hath this undoubted pledge of his salvation. These are the five shields, wherewith the godly receive the darts of the wicked: leaving anger, and retorting, and revenge, to the children of the world; whom another's ill mastereth, and leadeth captive, without any resistance, even in resistance, to the same destruction. For, while they resist the person that reviles, they resist not the evil which takes hold of them, and is far the worse enemy.

## CHAP. XXIX.

## THE PARSON WITH HIS CHURCHWARDENS.

THE Country Parson doth often, both publicly and privately, instruct his churchwardens what a great charge lies upon them; and that, indeed, the whole order and discipline of the parish is put into their hands. If himself reform any thing, it is out of the overflowing of his conscience; whereas they are to do it by command, and by oath. Neither hath the place its dignity from the ecclesiastical laws only: since even by the common statute-law they are taken for a kind of corporation, as being persons enabled by that name to take movable goods or chattels, and to sue and to be sued at the law concerning such goods, for the use and profit of their parish; and, by the same law, they are to levy penalties for negligence in resorting to church, or for disorderly carriage in time of divine service. Wherefore the Parson suffers not the place to be vilified or debased, by being cast on the lower rank of people: but invites and urges the best unto it,



showing that they do not lose or go less, but gain by it;—it being the greatest honour of this world, to do God and his chosen service; or, as David says, *to be even a doorkeeper in the house of God.*—Now the canons being the churchwardens' rule, the Parson adviseth them to read or hear them read often, as also the visitation articles, which are grounded upon the canons; that so they may know their duty and keep their oath the better. In which regard, considering the great consequence of their place, and more of their oath, he wisheth them by no means to spare any, though never so great; but if after gentle and neighbourly admonitions, they still persist in ill, to present them; yea though they be tenants, or otherwise engaged to the delinquent; for their obligation to God and their own soul is above any temporal tie, “Do well and right, and let the world sink.”

## CHAP. XXX.

## THE PARSON'S CONSIDERATION OF PROVIDENCE.

THE Country Parson—considering the great aptness country people have to think that all things come by a kind of natural course; and that if they sow and soil their grounds, they must have corn; if they keep and fodder well their cattle, they must have milk, and calves,—labours to reduce them to see God's hand in all things; and to believe, that things are not set in such an inevitable order, but that God often changeth it accordingly as he sees fit, either for reward or punishment. To this end he represents to his flock that God hath and exerciseth a threefold power, in every thing which concerns man. The first is a sustaining power; the second, a governing power; the third, a spiritual power. By his *sustaining power*, he preserves and actuates every thing in his being. So that corn doth not grow by any other virtue, than by that which he continually supplies, as the corn needs it; without which supply, the corn would

instantly dry up, as the river would if the fountain were stopped. And it is observable, that, if any thing could presume of an inevitable course and constancy in its operations, certainly it should be either the sun in heaven, or the fire on earth; by reason of their fierce, strong, and violent natures. Yet when God pleased, the sun stood still, the fire burned not.—By God's *governing power*, he preserves and orders the references of things one to the other. So that, though the corn do grow, and be preserved in that act by his sustaining power, yet if he suit not other things to the growth (as seasons and weather, and other accidents) by his governing power, the fairest harvests come to nothing. And it is observable, that God delights to have men feel, and acknowledge, and reverence his power; and therefore he often overturns things, when they are thought past danger. That is his time of interposing. As when a merchant hath a ship come home, after many a storm which it hath escaped, he destroys it sometimes in the very haven; or, if the goods be housed, a fire hath broken forth and suddenly consumed them. Now this he doth, that men should perpetuate, and not

break off, their acts of dependence ; how fair soever the opportunities present themselves. So that if a farmer should depend upon God all the year, and being ready to put hand to sickle, shall then secure himself, and think all certain ; then God sends such weather as lays the corn and destroys it. Or if he depend on God farther, even till he imbarn his corn, and then think all sure ; then God sends a fire, and consumes all that he hath. For that he ought not to break off, but to continue, his dependence on God ; not only before the corn is housed, but after also ; and, indeed, to depend and fear continually.—The third *power* is *spiritual*, by which God turns all outward blessings to inward advantages. So that if a farmer hath a fair harvest, and that also well inned and imbarned, and continuing safe there ; yet, if God give him not grace to use and utter this well, all his advantages are to his loss. Better were his corn burnt, than not spiritually improved. And it is observable in this, how God's goodness strives with man's refractoriness. Man would sit down at *this* world ; God bids him sell it and purchase a better. Just as a father, who hath in his hand an apple, and a

piece of gold under it ; the child comes, and with pulling gets the apple out of his father's hand ; his father bids him throw it away, and he will give him the gold for it ; which the child utterly refusing, eats it, and is troubled with worms :—so is the carnal and wilful man with the worm of the grave in this world, and the worm of conscience in the next.

---

## CHAP XXXI.

### THE PARSON IN LIBERTY.

THE Country Parson, observing the manifold wiles of Satan, who plays his part, sometimes in drawing God's servants from him, sometimes in perplexing them in the service of God, stands fast in the liberty wherewith Christ hath made us free. This liberty he compasseth by one distinction ; and that is, of what is necessary, and what is additional. As for example : it is necessary, that all Christians should pray twice a day, every day of the week, and four times on Sunday, if they be well. This is so necessary and essential to a Christian,

that he cannot, without this, maintain himself in a Christian state. Besides this, the godly have ever added some hours of prayer; as at nine, or at three, or at midnight, or as they think fit, and see cause,—or, rather, as God's Spirit leads them. But these prayers are not necessary, but additional. Now it so happens, that the godly petitioner, upon some emergent interruption in the day, or by oversleeping himself at night, omits his additional prayer. Upon this, his mind begins to be perplexed and troubled; and Satan, who knows the exigency, blows the fire, endeavouring to disorder the Christian, and put him out of his station, and to enlarge the perplexity, until it spread, and taint his other duties of piety, which none can perform so well in trouble as in calmness. Here the Parson interposeth with his distinction; and shows the perplexed Christian, that—this prayer, being additional, not necessary; taken in, not commanded—the omission thereof upon just occasion ought by no means to trouble him. God knows the occasion as well as he; and he is as a gracious father, who more accepts a common course of devotion, than dislikes an occasional interruption. And of this he is so to assure

himself, as to admit no scruple, but to go on as cheerfully as if he had not been interrupted. By this it is evident that the distinction is of singular use and comfort ; especially to pious minds, which are ever tender and delicate.—But here there are two cautions to be added. *First*, that this interruption proceed not out of slackness or coldness : which will appear if the pious soul foresee and prevent such interruptions, what he may, before they come ; and when, for all that, they do come, he be a little affected therewith, but not afflicted or troubled ; if he resent it to a mislike, but not a grief. *Secondly*, that this interruption proceed not out of shame. As for example : a godly man, not out of superstition, but of reverence to God's house, resolves, whenever he enters into a church, to kneel down and pray ; either blessing God, that he will be pleased to dwell among men ; or beseeching him that whenever he repairs to his house, he may behave himself so as befits so great a presence ; and this briefly. But it happens that, near the place where he is to pray, he spies some scoffing ruffian, who is likely to deride him for his pains. If he now shall, either for fear or shame, break

his custom, he shall do passing ill ; so much the rather ought he to proceed, as that by this he may take into his prayer humiliation also. On the other side, if I am to visit the sick in haste, and my nearest way lie through the church, I will not doubt to go without staying to pray there, but only, as I pass, in my heart, because this kind of prayer is additionary, not necessary ; and the other duty overweighs it, so that, if any scruple arise, I will throw it away, and be most confident that God is not displeased.

This distinction may run through all Christian duties ; and it is a great stay and settling to religious souls.

---

## CHAP. XXXII.

### THE PARSON'S SURVEYS.

THE Country Parson hath not only taken a particular survey of the faults of his own parish, but a general also of the diseases of the time ; that so, when his occasions carry him abroad, or bring strangers to him, he may be the better armed to



encounter them.—The great and national sin of this land, he esteems to be idleness: great in itself, and great in consequence; for when men have nothing to do, then they fall to drink, to steal, to whore, to scoff, to revile, to all sorts of gaming. “Come,” say they, “we have nothing to do; let’s go to the tavern, or to the stews;” or what not. Wherefore the Parson strongly opposeth this sin, wheresoever he goes.

And because idleness is twofold—the one in having no calling, the other in walking carelessly in our calling,—he first represents to every body the necessity of a vocation. The reason of this assertion is taken from the nature of man; wherein God hath placed two great instruments, reason in the soul, and a hand in the body, as engagements of working. So that even in paradise man had a calling; and how much more out of paradise, when the evils which he is now subject unto, may be prevented or diverted by reasonable employment? Besides, every gift or ability is a talent to be accounted for, and to be improved to our Master’s advantage. Yet is it also a debt to our country to have a calling: and it concerns the commonwealth,

that none should be idle, but all busied. Lastly, riches are the blessing of God, and the great instrument of doing admirable good; therefore, all are to procure them honestly and seasonably, when they are not better employed. Now this reason crosseth not our Saviour's precept of selling what we have; because, when we have sold all and given it to the poor, we must not be idle, but labour to get more, that we may give more; according to St. Paul's rule<sup>1</sup>. So that our Saviour's selling is so far from crossing St. Paul's working, that it rather establisheth it; since they that have nothing, are fittest to work.

Now because the only opposer of this doctrine is the gallant, who is witty enough to abuse both others and himself, and who is ready to ask, if he shall mend shoes, or what he shall do; therefore the Parson, unmoved, showeth, that ingenuous and fit employment is never wanting to those that seek it. But if it should be, the assertion stands thus: all are either to have a calling, or prepare for it; he that hath or can have yet no employment, if he truly and seriously prepare for it, he

<sup>1</sup> Eph. iv. 28. 1 Thess. iv. 11, 12.

is safe and within bounds. Wherefore all are either presently to enter into a calling, if they be fit for it, and it for them; or else to examine, with care and advice, what they are fittest for, and to prepare for that with all diligence.

But it will not be amiss, in this exceeding useful point, to descend to particulars; for exactness lies in particulars.

Men are either single or married. The married and housekeeper hath his hands full, if he do what he ought to do. For there are two branches of his affairs: first, the improvement of his family, by bringing them up in the fear and nurture of the Lord; and secondly, the improvement of his grounds, by drowing, or draining, stocking, or fencing, and ordering his land to the best advantage both of himself and his neighbours. The Italian says, "None fouls his hands in his own business." And it is an honest and just care, so it exceed not bounds, for every one to employ himself to the advancement of his affairs, that he may have wherewithal to do good. But his family is his best care: to labour Christian souls, and to raise them to their height, even to heaven; to dress and

prune them, and take as much joy in a straight-growing child or servant, as a gardener doth in a choice tree. Could men find out this delight, they would seldom be from home; whereas now, of any place, they are least there. But if, after all this care well dispatched, the housekeeper's family be so small, and his dexterity so great, that he have leisure to look out; the village or parish which either he lives in, or is near unto it, is his employment. He considers every one there; and either helps them in particular, or hath general propositions to the whole town or hamlet of advancing the public stock, and managing commons or woods, according as the place suggests. But if he may be of the commission of peace, there is nothing to that. No commonwealth in the world hath a better institution than that of justices of the peace. For it is both a security to the King, who hath so many dispersed officers at his back throughout the kingdom, accountable for the public good; and also an honourable employment of a gentle or noble man in the country he lives in, enabling him with power to do good, and to restrain all those who else might both

trouble him and the whole estate. Wherefore it behoves all, who are come to the gravity and ripeness of judgment for so excellent a place, not to refuse, but rather to procure it. And, whereas there are usually three objections made against the place; the one, the abuse of it, by taking petty county bribes; the other, the casting of it on mean persons, especially in some shires; and lastly, the trouble of it:—these are so far from deterring any good man from the place, that they kindle them rather to redeem the dignity either from true faults or unjust aspersions.

Now, for single men, they are either heirs, or younger brothers,—The heirs are to prepare in all the forementioned points against the time of their practice. Therefore they are to mark their father's discretion in ordering his house and affairs; and also elsewhere, when they see any remarkable point of education or good husbandry, and to transplant it in time to his own home; with the same care as others, when they meet with good fruit, get a graft of the tree, enriching their orchard, and neglecting their house. Besides, they are to read books of law and justice; especially the

Statutes at Large. As for better books, of divinity, they are not in this consideration ; because we are about a calling, and a preparation thereunto. But, chiefly and above all things, they are to frequent sessions and assizes. For it is both an honour which they owe to the reverend judges and magistrates to attend them, at least in their shire : and it is a great advantage to know the practice of the land ; for our law is practice. Sometimes he may go to court, as the eminent place both of good and ill. At other times he is to travel over the king's dominions ; cutting out the kingdom into portions, which every year he surveys piece-meal. When there is a parliament, he is to endeavour by all means to be a knight or burgess there ; for there is no school to a parliament. And when he is there, he must not only be a morning man, but at committees also ; for there the particulars are exactly discussed, which are brought from thence to the house but in general. When none of these occasions call him abroad, every morning that he is at home, he must either ride the great horse, or exercise some of his military gestures. For all gentlemen, that are not weakened and disarmed

with sedentary lives, are to know the use of their arms: and as the husbandman labours for them, so must they fight for and defend him, when occasion calls. This is the duty of each to other, which they ought to fulfil: and the Parson is a lover and exciter to justice in all things; even as John the Baptist squared out to every one, even to soldiers, what to do. As for younger brothers, those whom the Parson finds loose, and not engaged in some profession by their parents, whose neglect in this point is intolerable, and a shameful wrong both to the commonwealth and their own house, to them, after he hath showed the unlawfulness of spending the day in dressing, complimenting, visiting, and sporting, he first commends the study of civil law, as a brave and wise knowledge; the professors whereof were much employed by Queen Elizabeth; because it is the key of commerce, and discovers the rules of foreign nations. Secondly, he commends the mathematics, as the only wonder-working knowledge, and therefore requiring the best spirits. After the several knowledge of these, he adviseth to insist and dwell chiefly on the two noble branches thereof, of

fortification and navigation ; the one being useful to all countries, and the other especially to islands. But if the young gallant think these courses dull and phlegmatic, where can he busy himself better than in those new plantations and discoveries, which are not only a noble, but also, as they may be handled, a religious employment ? Or let him travel into Germany and France ; and, observing the artifices and manufactures there, transplant them hither, as divers have done lately, to our country's advantage.

---

### CHAP. XXXIII.

#### THE PARSON'S LIBRARY.

THE Country Parson's library is A HOLY LIFE ; for (besides the blessing that that brings upon it,—there being a promise, that if the kingdom of God be first sought, all other things shall be added) even itself is a sermon. For the temptations with which a good man is beset, and the ways which he useth to overcome them, being told to another,



whether in private conference or in the church, are a sermon. He that hath considered how to carry himself at table about his appetite, if he tells this to another, preacheth; and much more feelingly and judiciously, than he writes his rules of temperance out of books. So that the Parson having studied and mastered all his lusts and affections within, and the whole army of temptations without, hath ever so many sermons ready penned, as he hath victories. And it fares in this as it doth in physic. He that hath been sick of a consumption, and knows what recovered him, is a physician, so far as he meets with the same disease, and temper; and can much better and particularly do it, than he that is generally learned, and was never sick. And if the same person had been sick of all diseases, and were recovered of all, by things that he knew; there were no such physician as he, both for skill and tenderness. Just so it is in divinity; and that not without manifest reason. For though the temptations may be diverse in divers Christians, yet the victory is alike in all, being by the self-same Spirit.

Neither is this true only in the military state of

a Christian life, but even in the peaceable also, when the servant of God, freed for awhile from temptation, in a quiet sweetness seeks how to please his God. Thus the Parson, considering that repentance is the great virtue of the Gospel, and one of the first steps of pleasing God, having for his own use examined the nature of it, is able to explain it after to others. And, particularly, having doubted sometimes whether his repentance were true, or at least in that degree it ought to be;—since he found himself sometimes to weep more for the loss of some temporal things, than for offending God;—he came at length to this resolution, that repentance is an act of the mind, not of the body, even as the original signifies; and that the chief thing which God in the Scriptures requires, is the heart and the spirit, and to worship him in truth and spirit. Wherefore, in case a Christian endeavour to weep and cannot, since we are not masters of our own bodies, this sufficeth. And consequently he found, that the essence of repentance, (that it may be alike in all God's children,—which as concerning weeping it cannot be, some being of a more melting temper than others)

consisteth in a true detestation of the soul, abhorring and renouncing sin, and turning unto God in truth of heart and newness of life: which acts of repentance are and must be found in all God's servants. Not that weeping is not useful, where it can be (that so the body may join in the grief, as it did in the sin), but that, so the other acts be, *that* is not necessary. So that he as truly repents, who performs the other acts of repentance, when he cannot more, as he that weeps a flood of tears.— This instruction and comfort the Parson getting for himself, when he tells it to others, becomes a sermon. The like he doth in other Christian virtues, as of faith and love, and the cases of conscience belonging thereto: wherein, as St. Paul implies that he ought, Rom. ii., he first preacheth to himself, and then to others.



## CHAP. XXXIV.

## THE PARSON'S DEXTERITY IN APPLYING OF REMEDIES.

THE Country Parson knows, that there is a double state of a Christian even in this life; the one military, the other peaceable. The military is, when we are assaulted with temptations, either from within or from without. The peaceable is, when the devil for a time leaves us, as he did our Saviour, and the angels minister to us their own food, even joy, and peace, and comfort in the Holy Ghost. These two states were in our Saviour, not only in the beginning of his preaching but afterward also (as Matt. xxii. 35, he was tempted: and Luke x. 21, he rejoiced in spirit); and they must be likewise in all that are his. Now the Parson having a spiritual judgment, according as he discovers any of his flock to be in one and the other state, so he applies himself to them.

Those that he finds in the peaceable state, he adviseth to be very vigilant, and not to let go the reins as soon as the horse goes easy. Particularly,

he counselleth them to two things. First, to take heed lest their quiet betray them, as it is apt to do, to a coldness and carelessness in their devotions; but to labour still to be as fervent in Christian duties, as they remember themselves were, when affliction did blow the coals. Secondly, not to take the full compass and liberty of their peace: not to eat of all those dishes at table, which even their present health otherwise admits; nor to store their house with all those furnitures, which even their present plenty of wealth otherwise admits; nor, when they are among them that are merry, to extend themselves to all that mirth, which the present occasion of wit and company otherwise admits: but to put bounds and hopes to their joys; so will they last the longer, and, when they depart, return the sooner. If we would judge ourselves, we should not be judged; and if we would bound ourselves, we should not be bounded. But if they should fear that, at such or such a time, their peace and mirth have carried them farther than this moderation; then to take Job's admirable course, who sacrificed, lest his children should have transgressed in their mirth. So let them go, and find

some poor afflicted soul, and there be bountiful and liberal ; for with such sacrifices God is well pleased.

Those that the Parson finds in the military state, he fortifies, and strengthens with his utmost skill.—Now, in those that are tempted, whatsoever is unruly falls upon two heads. Either they think that there is none that can or will look after things, but all goes by chance or wit ; or else, though there be a great Governor of all things, yet *to them* he is lost ; as if they said, God doth forsake and persecute them, and there is none to deliver them.

If the Parson suspect the first, and find sparks of such thoughts now and then to break forth, then, without opposing directly, for disputation is no cure for atheism, he scatters in his discourse three sorts of arguments ; the first taken from Nature, the second from the Law, the third from Grace.—For *Nature*, he sees not how a house could be either built without a builder, or kept in repair without a housekeeper. He conceives not possibly, how the winds should blow so much as they can, and the sea rage so much as it can ; and all things do what they can, and

all, not only without dissolution of the whole, but also of any part, by taking away so much as the usual seasons of summer and winter, earing and harvest. Let the weather be what it will, still we have bread; though sometimes more, sometimes less; wherewith also a careful Joseph might meet. He conceives not possibly how he, that would believe a Divinity, if he had been at the creation of all things, should less believe it, seeing the preservation of all things. For preservation is a creation; and more, it is a continued creation, and a creation every moment.—Secondly, for the *Law*, there may be so evident, though unused, a proof of divinity taken from thence, that the atheist or epicurean can have nothing to contradict. The Jews yet live, and are known. They have their law and language bearing witness to them, and they do it. They are circumcised to this day; and expect the promises of the Scripture. Their country also is known; the places and rivers travelled unto and frequented by others, but to them an impenetrable rock, an inaccessible desert. Wherefore if the Jews live, all the great wonders of old live in them; and then who can deny the

stretched out arm of a mighty God? especially since it may be a just doubt, whether, considering the stubbornness of the nation, their living then in their country under so many miracles were a stranger thing, than their present exile, and disability to live in their country. And it is observable, that this very thing was intended by God; that the Jews should be his proof, and witnesses, as he calls them (Isa. xliii. 12). And their very dispersion in all lands was intended, not only for a punishment to them, but as an exciting of others, by their sight, to the acknowledging of God and his power<sup>1</sup>; and therefore this kind of punishment was chosen rather than any other.—Thirdly, for *Grace*. Besides the continual succession, since the Gospel, of holy men who have borne witness to the truth (there being no reason why any should distrust St. Luke, Tertullian, or Chrysostom, more than Tully, Virgil, or Livy); there are two prophecies in the Gospel, which evidently argue Christ's divinity by their success. The one, concerning the woman that spent the ointment on our Saviour; for which he told, that it should

<sup>1</sup> Ps. lix. 11.



never be forgotten, but with the Gospel itself be preached to all ages<sup>1</sup>. The other, concerning the destruction of Jerusalem; of which our Saviour said, that that generation should not pass till all was fulfilled<sup>2</sup>: which Josephus' story confirmeth, and the continuance of which verdict is yet evident. To these might be added the preaching of the Gospel in all nations<sup>3</sup>: which we see even miraculously effected in these new discoveries, God turning men's covetousness and ambitions to the effecting of his word. Now a prophecy is a wonder sent to posterity, lest they complain of want of wonders. It is a letter sealed, and sent; which to the bearer is but paper, but to the receiver and opener is full of power. He that saw Christ open a blind man's eyes, saw not more divinity, than he that reads the woman's ointment in the Gospel, or sees Jerusalem destroyed.—With some of these heads, enlarged and woven into his discourse, at several times and occasions, the Parson settleth wavering minds.

But if he sees them nearer desperation than atheism—not so much doubting a God, as that

<sup>1</sup> Matt. xxvi. 13.    <sup>2</sup> Luke xxi. 32.    <sup>3</sup> Matt. xxiv. 14.

he is theirs—then he dives into the boundless ocean of God's love, and the unspeakable riches of his loving kindness. He hath one argument unanswerable. If God hate them, either he doth it as they are creatures, dust and ashes; or as they are sinful. As creatures, he must needs love them; for no perfect artist ever yet hated his own work. As sinful, he must much more love them: because, notwithstanding his infinite hate of sin, his love overcame that hate; and with an exceeding great victory, which in the creation needed not, gave them love for love, even the Son of his love out of his bosom of love. So that man, which way soever he turns, hath two pledges of God's love; that in the mouth of two or three witnesses every word may be established; the one in his being, the other in his sinful being; and this, as the more faulty in him, so the more glorious in God. And all may certainly conclude that God loves them, till either they despise that love, or despair of his mercy. Not any sin else, but is within his love; but the despising of love must needs be without it. The thrusting away of his arm makes us only not embraced.

## CHAP. XXXV.

## THE PARSON'S CONDESCENDING.

THE Country Parson is a lover of old customs, if they be good and harmless: and the rather, because country people are much addicted to them; so that to favour them therein is to win their hearts, and to oppose them therein is to deject them. If there be any ill in the custom, that may be severed from the good, he pares the apple, and gives them the clean to feed on. Particularly he loves procession, and maintains it; because there are contained therein four manifest advantages. First, a blessing of God for the fruits of the field: secondly, justice in the preservation of bounds: thirdly, charity in loving, walking, and neighbourly accompanying one another: with reconciling of differences at that time, if there be any: fourthly, mercy in relieving the poor by a liberal distribution and largess, which at that time is or ought to be used. Wherefore, he exacts of all to be present at the perambulation: and

those, that withdraw and sever themselves from it, he dislikes and reproves as uncharitably and un-neighbourly ; and, if they will not reform, presents them. Nay, he is so far from condemning such assemblies, that he rather procures them to be often ; as knowing that absence breeds strangeness, but presence love. Now love is his business and aim. Wherefore he likes well that his parish at good times invite one another to their houses ; and he urgeth them to it. And sometimes, where he knows there hath been or is a little difference, he takes one of the parties, and goes with him to the other ; and all dine or sup together. There is much preaching in this friendliness.

Another old custom there is of saying, when light is brought in, "God send us the light of heaven!" and the Parson likes this very well. Neither is he afraid of praising or praying to God at all times, but is rather glad of catching opportunities to do them. Light is a great blessing ; and as great as food, for which we give thanks : and those that think this superstitious, neither know superstition nor themselves. As for those that are ashamed to use this form, as being old

and obsolete, and not the fashion, he reforms and teaches them, that at baptism they professed not to be ashamed of Christ's cross, or for any shame to leave that which is good. He that is ashamed in small things, will extend his pusillanimity to greater. Rather should a Christian soldier take such occasions to harden himself, and to further his exercises of mortification.

---

## CHAP. XXXVI.

### THE PARSON BLESSING.

THE Country Parson wonders, that blessing the people is in so little use with his brethren ; whereas he thinks it not only a grave and reverend thing, but a beneficial also. Those who use it not, do so either out of niceness, because they like the salutations, and compliments, and forms of worldly language better ;—which conformity and fashionableness is so exceeding unbecoming a minister, that it deserves reproof, not refutation ;—or else, because they think it empty and superfluous. But

that which the apostles used so diligently in their writings, nay, which our Saviour himself used<sup>1</sup>, cannot be vain and superfluous. But this was not proper to Christ or the apostles only, no more than to be a spiritual father was appropriated to them. And if temporal fathers bless their children, how much more may, and ought, spiritual fathers! Besides, the priests of the Old Testament were commanded to bless the people, and the form thereof is prescribed<sup>2</sup>. Now, as the apostle argues in another case, if the ministration of condemnation did bless, how shall not the ministration of the Spirit exceed in blessing? The fruit of this blessing good Hannah found, and received with great joy<sup>3</sup>, though it came from a man disallowed by God: for it was not the person, but priesthood, that blessed; so that even ill priests may bless.—Neither have the ministers power of blessing only, but also of cursing. So, in the Old Testament, Elisha cursed the children<sup>4</sup>; which, though our Saviour reprov'd, as unbecoming for his particular, who was to show all humility before his passion,

<sup>1</sup> Mark x. 16.

<sup>2</sup> Num. vi.

<sup>3</sup> 1 Sam. i. 18.

<sup>4</sup> 2 Kings ii. 24.

yet he allows it in his apostles. And therefore St. Peter used that fearful imprecation to Simon Magus<sup>1</sup>; *Thy money perish with thee*: and the event confirmed it. So did St. Paul<sup>2</sup>; speaking of Alexander the coppersmith, who had withstood his preaching, *The Lord*, saith he, *reward him according to his works*. And again, of Hymeneus and Alexander, he saith, he had *delivered them to Satan*, *that they might learn not to blaspheme*. The forms both of blessing and cursing are expounded in the common prayer-book; the one, in "The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ," &c. and "The peace of God," &c.: the other, in general, in the Communion.

Now blessing differs from prayer, in assurance; because it is not performed by way of request, but of confidence and power, effectually applying God's favour to the blessed, by the interesting of that dignity wherewith God hath invested the Priest, and engaging of God's own power and institution for a blessing. The neglect of this duty in ministers themselves, hath made the people also neglect it; so that they are so far from craving this benefit

<sup>1</sup> Acts viii. 20, 21.

<sup>2</sup> 2 Tim. iv. 14. 1 Tim. i. 20.

from their ghostly father, that they oftentimes go out of church before he hath blessed them.—In the time of Popery, the Priest's *Benedicite* and his holy water were over-highly valued; and now we are fallen to the clean contrary, even from superstition to coldness and atheism.—But the Parson first values the gift in himself, and then teacheth his parish to value it. And it is observable, that, if a minister talk with a great man in the ordinary course of complimenting language, he shall be esteemed as ordinary complimenters. But if he often interpose a blessing, when the other gives him just opportunity by speaking any good, this unusual form begets a reverence, and makes him esteemed according to his profession. The same is to be observed in writing letters also.

To conclude; if all men are to bless upon occasion, as appears, Rom. xii. 14, how much more those who are spiritual fathers?



## CHAP. XXXVII.

## CONCERNING DETRACTION.

THE Country Parson—perceiving that most, when they are at leisure, make others' faults their entertainment and discourse; and that even some good men think, so they speak truth, they may disclose another's fault—finds it somewhat difficult how to proceed in this point. For if he absolutely shut up men's mouths, and forbid all disclosing of faults, many an evil may not only be, but also spread in his parish, without any remedy, which cannot be applied without notice, to the dishonour of God, and the infection of his flock, and the discomfort, discredit, and hindrance of the Pastor. On the other side, if it be unlawful to open faults, no benefit or advantage can make it lawful; for we must not do evil that good may come of it.

Now the Parson, taking this point to task, which is so exceeding useful, and hath taken so deep root that it seems the very life and substance of conver-

sation, hath proceeded thus far in the discussing of it. Faults are either notorious or private. Again, notorious faults are either such as are made known by common fame ; and of these those that know them may talk, so they do it not with sport, but commiseration :—or else such as have passed judgment, and been corrected either by whipping, imprisoning, or the like. Of these also men may talk ; and more, they may discover them to those that knew them not ; because infamy is a part of the sentence against malefactors, which the law intends ; as is evident by those which are branded for rogues, that that they may be known, or put into the stocks, that they be looked upon. But some may say, though the law allow this, the Gospel doth not : which hath so much advanced charity, and ranked backbiters among the generation of the wicked<sup>1</sup>. But this is easily answered. As the executioner is not uncharitable that takes away the life of the condemned, except, besides his office, he adds a tincture of private malice, in the joy and haste of acting his part : so neither is he that defames *him*, whom the law would have defamed, except he also do it out

<sup>1</sup> Rom. i. 30.

of rancour. For, in infamy, all are executioners; and the law gives a malefactor to all to be defamed. And, as malefactors may lose and forfeit their goods or life; so may they their good name, and the possession thereof, which, before their offence and judgment, they had in all men's breasts. For all are honest till the contrary be proved.—Besides, it concerns the commonwealth that rogues should be known; and charity to the public hath the precedence of private charity. So that it is so far from being a fault to discover such offenders, that it is a duty rather; which may do much good, and save much harm.—Nevertheless, if the punished delinquent shall be much troubled for his sins, and turn quite another man, doubtless then also men's affections and words must turn, and forbear to speak of that, which even God himself hath forgotten.

## THE AUTHOR'S PRAYER BEFORE SERMON.

O ALMIGHTY and ever-living God! Majesty, and Power, and Brightness, and Glory! How shall we dare to appear before thy face, who are contrary to thee, in all we call thee? For we are darkness, and weakness, and filthiness, and shame. Misery and sin fill our days. Yet art thou our Creator, and we thy work. Thy hands both made us, and also made us lords of all thy creatures; giving us one world in ourselves and another to serve us. Then didst thou place us in Paradise, and wert proceeding still on in thy favours, until we interrupted thy counsels, disappointed thy purposes, and sold our God—our glorious, our gracious God—for an apple. Oh write it—Oh, brand it on our foreheads for ever! For an apple once we lost our God, and still lose him for no more; for money, for meat, for diet. But thou, Lord, art patience, and pity, and sweetness, and love; therefore we sons of men are not consumed. Thou hast exalted thy mercy above all things, and hast made our

salvation, not our punishment, thy glory ; so that then, where sin abounded, not death, but grace superabounded. Accordingly, when we had sinned beyond any help in heaven or earth, then thou saidst, "Lo, I come!" Then did the Lord of life, unable of himself to die, contrive to do it. He took flesh, he wept, he died ; for his enemies he died ; even for those that derided him then, and still despise him. Blessed Saviour ! many waters could not quench thy love, nor no pit overwhelm it. But, though the streams of thy blood were current through darkness, grave, and hell ; yet by these thy conflicts, and seemingly hazards, didst thou rise triumphant, and therein madest us victorious.

Neither doth thy love yet stay here. For this word of thy rich peace and reconciliation thou hast committed—not to thunder, or angels, but to silly and sinful men ; even to me, pardoning my sins, and bidding me go feed the people of thy love.

Blessed be the God of heaven and earth, who only doth wondrous things. Awake, therefore, my lute, and my viol ; awake all my powers to

glorify thee ! We praise thee, we bless thee, we magnify thee for ever. And now, O Lord ! in the power of thy victories, and in the ways of thy ordinances, and in the truth of thy love, lo ! we stand here ; beseeching thee to bless thy word, wherever spoken this day throughout the universal church. Oh, make it a word of power and peace, to convert those who are not yet thine, and to confirm those that are. Particularly, bless it in this thy own kingdom, which thou hast made a land of light, a storehouse of thy treasures and mercies. Oh, let not our foolish and unworthy hearts rob us of the continuance of this thy sweet love : but pardon our sins, and perfect what thou hast begun. Ride on, Lord, because of the word of truth and meekness, and righteousness ; and thy right hand shall teach thee terrible things.—Especially bless this portion here assembled together, with thy unworthy servant speaking unto them : Lord Jesu, teach thou me, that I may teach them. Sanctify and enable all my powers, that in their full strength they may deliver thy message reverently, readily, faithfully, and fruitfully. Oh, make thy word a swift word, passing from the ear to the heart, from

the heart to the life and conversation ; that, as the rain returns not empty, so neither may thy word, but accomplish that for which it is given.

O Lord, hear ; O Lord, forgive ; O Lord, hearken, and do so for thy blessed Son's sake : in whose sweet and pleasing words we say, Our Father, &c.

---

A PRAYER AFTER SERMON.

BLESSED be God, and the Father of all mercy, who continueth to pour his benefits upon us. Thou hast elected us, thou hast called us, thou hast justified us, sanctified and glorified us. Thou wast born for us, and thou livedst and diedst for us. Thou hast given us the blessings of this life, and of a better. O Lord ! thy blessings hang in clusters ; they come trooping upon us ; they break forth like mighty waters on every side. And now, Lord, thou hast fed us with the bread of life, *So man did eat angels' food.* O Lord, bless it ! O Lord, make it health and strength to us !—still striving and prospering so long within us, until our obedience reach the measure of thy love, who hast

done for us as much as may be. Grant this, dear Father, for thy Son's sake, our only Saviour : to whom with thee and the Holy Ghost,—three persons, but one most glorious, incomprehensible God,—be ascribed all honour, and glory, and praise, ever. Amen.

THE END.





LONDON :  
GILBERT AND RIVINGTON, PRINTERS,  
ST. JOHN'S SQUARE.



